V
570

V570

No. 4991.F.

HAMPSTEAD PUBLIC LIBRARIES.

CENTRAL LENDING LIBRARY,
FINCHLEY ROAD, N.W. 3.

Lending Library Hours.—The Lending Library is open from **10.30** a.m. to **7.30** p.m. every day except Sunday, Wednesday, Christmas Day, Good Friday, Bank Holidays, and such other days as the Committee may from time to time direct.

Examination of Books.—Registered borrowers are permitted direct access to the bookshelves.

Borrowers are particularly requested to replace books, after examination, in the order upon the shelves from which they were taken.

A card catalogue is provided for purposes of reference.

S. 587—30,000—3-26.

TRANSFERRED TO
Metropolitan Special Collections
LEWISHAM.

LONDON BOROUGH
OF
LEWISHAM
LIBRARY SERVICE

Author

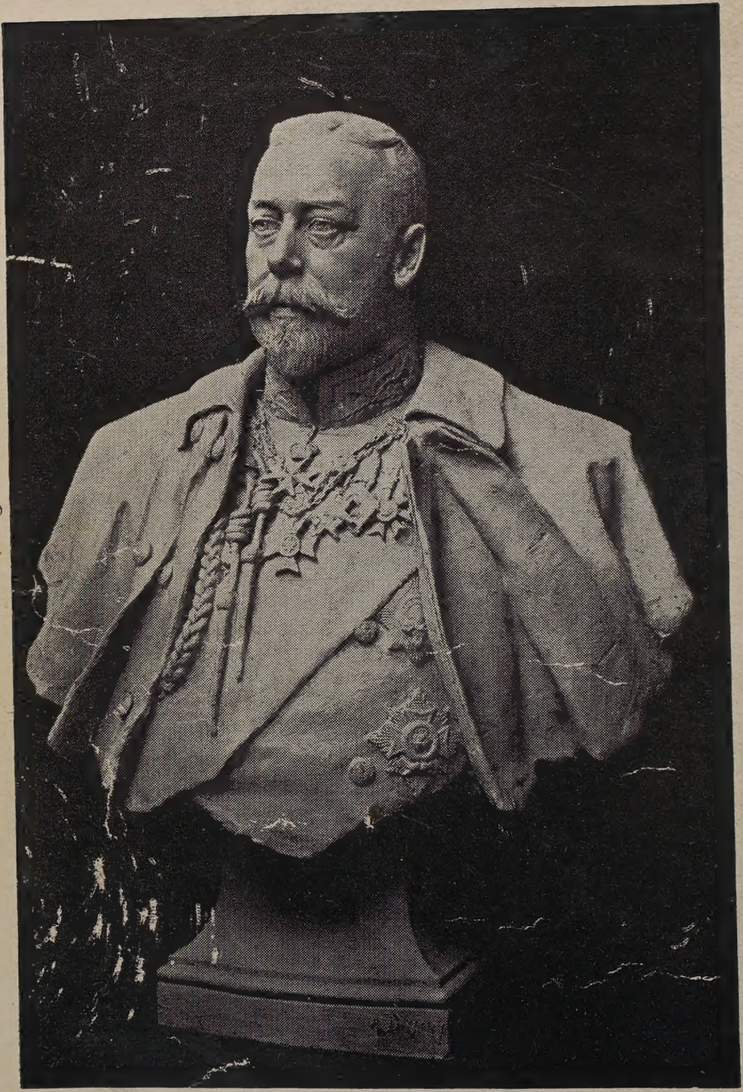
Title

BOOK STORE

Books or discs must be returned on or before the last date stamped on label or on card in book pocket. Books or discs can be renewed by telephone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader. After library hours use the Ansafone Service (01-698 7347). For hours of opening and charges see notices at the above branch, but note that all lending departments close at 1 pm on Wednesday and all libraries are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays and Saturdays prior to Bank Holidays

METROPOLITAN
SPECIAL COLLECTION

KING GEORGE
AND THE ROYAL FAMILY



King George V

Bust by Alfred Drury, R.A.
By permission of the sculptor

942.0813

KING GEORGE
AND THE ROYAL FAMILY

BY

EDWARD LEGGE

AUTHOR OF

"KING EDWARD IN HIS TRUE COLOURS"

VOLUME I

LONDON
GRANT RICHARDS LTD.
ST. MARTIN'S STREET
MCMXVIII

~~5593 J~~
ACC. 34164

942·083
4991 F

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN AT
THE COMPLETE PRESS
WEST NORWOOD
LONDON

~~942/083~~
~~4991F~~

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CONTENTS

CHAP. PAGE

I. THE KING'S CHARACTER AND ATTRIBUTES: HIS ACCESSION AND "DECLARATION" 9

II. THE QUEEN 55

III. THE KING "BETWEEN THE DEVIL AND THE DEEP SEA" 77

IV. THE INTENDED COERCION OF ULSTER 99

V. THE KING FALSELY ACCUSED OF "INTERVENTION" 113

VI. THE MANTLE OF EDWARD VII INHERITED BY GEORGE V 122

VII. KING GEORGE AND QUEEN MARY IN PARIS (1914) 138

VIII. THE KING'S GREAT ADVENTURE (1914) 172

IX. THE MISHAP TO THE KING IN FRANCE, 1915 180

X. THE KING'S OWN WORDS 192

XI. WHY THE SOVEREIGNS ARE POPULAR 254

XII. THE KING ABOLISHES GERMAN TITLES, AND FOUNDS THE ROYAL HOUSE AND FAMILY OF WINDSOR 286

XIII. "LE ROY LE VEULT" 316

XIV. KING GEORGE, THE KAISER, HENRY THE SPY, AND MR. GERARD: THE KING'S TELEGRAMS, AND OTHERS 327

CHAP. PAGE
XV. KING GEORGE'S PARENTS IN PARIS 341
XVI. THE GREATEST OF THE GREAT GARDEN PARTIES 347
XVII. THE KING'S ACTIVITIES OUTLINED: 1910–1917 356
XVIII. THE CORONATION 372

ILLUSTRATIONS

		To face page
King George V	*Frontispiece*	
His late Majesty King Edward VII		40
Portrait of the late Princess Mary of Cambridge		56
The Children of the Royal Family		74
The King and Queen at the American Officers' Club, Mayfair		122
The King and President Poincaré		138
The Queen and Madame Poincaré		158
"Happy," the King's Dog		176
A Luncheon Party at Sandringham		190
His Majesty King George V in British Field-Marshal's Uniform		226
Facsimiles of Christmas Cards		268
H.R.H. Princess Mary		282
"Long Live the House of Windsor!"		294
Prince Henry of Prussia		332
Prince Charles of Sweden and his Consort		352
The Late Leopold I, King of the Belgians		372

CHAPTER I

THE KING'S CHARACTER AND ATTRIBUTES: HIS ACCESSION AND "DECLARATION"*

I

> King George has not been long upon the throne; but he too has played a part in which we older folk see an assurance that he will hand down to his successors untarnished and undimmed the lustre of the glory of which he is the heir.—Lord Redesdale, G.C.V.O., K.C.B., 1915.

Our Sovereign's parents, the Prince of Wales and Princess Alexandra of Denmark, were married at St. George's Chapel, Windsor, on March 10, 1863, the issue of the union being three sons (the youngest of whom died on April 6, 1871, the day after his birth) and three daughters. The latter are Princess Louise, Princess Royal, born in 1867, widow of the Duke of Fife; Princess Victoria, born in 1868; and Princess Maud, born in 1869, and married in 1896 to her cousin, Prince Christian (second son of Frederick VIII, King of Denmark), who in 1905 ascended the throne of Norway as King Haakon VII.

Prince George, who was born at Marlborough House, London, on June 3, 1865, was christened in the private chapel at Windsor Castle on July 7. By the death of his only brother, Prince Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence, on January 14, 1892, Prince George Frederick Ernest Albert became Heir Apparent.

---

* The Crowning of the King and Queen is described in vol. ii.

King George's illustrious grandmother, Queen Victoria, although descended from our Norman and Plantagenet kings, had in her the blood of no later Stuart Sovereign than James I. Although of Guelphic and Brunswick descent, the lines of our Saxon Sovereigns and of the ancient kings of Scotland centred in her, so that she had, and her descendants have, every claim to the Throne that birth can give.

The King and his elder brother were brought up in very simple fashion. Prince George was destined for the Navy. As a first start in life the two boys underwent a salutary two years' training on the *Britannia*, at Dartmouth. In August, 1879, they joined the *Bacchante*, in which they made a voyage round the world, lasting from 1879 until 1882. I had a friend on that ship, and he wrote fully to me at intervals, so that I was enabled to give the public the first original account of the voyage of the Princes. Four years later the official history appeared, dedicated to Queen Victoria "by Her Majesty's affectionate and dutiful grandsons, Albert Victor C. Edward, George Frederick E. Albert." *

Canon Dalton was their tutor on the voyage, and the commander of the ship was Lord Charles Scott. After the cruise Prince George was sent on the

---

* "The Cruise of H.M.S. *Bacchante*." London: Macmillan and Co., Ltd., 1886.

Continent for instruction in French and German, in which he ultimately became fairly proficient, although he has never become his father's equal in his knowledge of languages.

In 1884 we find Prince George a sub-lieutenant on board the *Canada*, and next passing some months in training at Greenwich. In the following year he served in the Mediterranean on the *Dreadnought*, and later on the *Alexandra*, the Duke of Edinburgh's flagship. He commanded the *Thrush* before he was twenty-five, and represented Queen Victoria at the opening of the Jamaica Exhibition. In 1898 he commanded the *Crescent* during the naval manœuvres. It was not until 1901, the year of his grandmother's death, that he was appointed Rear-Admiral. In 1903 he became a Vice-Admiral, in 1907 an Admiral, and in 1910 an Admiral of the Fleet.

On the death of his brother in January, 1892, Prince George became Heir Apparent, and shortly afterwards took his seat in the House of Lords as Duke of York, Earl of Inverness and Baron Killarney. His actual work at sea was now over, but he has remained a devotee of the Navy to this day.

One of the many episodes of the voyage on the *Bacchante* was an interview of the Princes with the Mikado at Tokio, at which the Empress of Japan was present.

The Diary of the two Princes during their cruise of nearly three years in the *Bacchante* was written by the boys themselves and edited by Canon Dalton, who tells us that not the slightest difference was made between them and their gunroom messmates.

One of their most notable experiences was their visit to Cetywayo, whom we had deposed from the Zulu throne. He was a prisoner near Cape Town when they saw him in 1881. With him were his four wives, who (the Princes noted) each weighed between sixteen and seventeen stone. The ex-King was wearing European clothes, but he gave his visitors a photograph of himself in his native "get-up." He seemed very anxious to be free, if only to make an end of the Boers. "Let me go," he said, "and I will walk through the Boers."

Canon Dalton, who was in charge of the two young Princes, "Eddie" and "George" (known to their messmates as "Sprat" and "Herring"), gave Mr. J. E. Vincent "a clear impression" of the lines on which the early education of the boys was planned: "The father insisted that modern languages, history, and mathematics were more important than English classics. Mr. Dalton did not disagree with him, but he made it clear that the act of learning Latin has an educational value apart from the result secured, and he carried his point. Among the Latin books which they read was the Vulgate, from which, in their letters home during the *Bacchante* cruise, both boys were in the habit of quoting."

It would be a great national service were a cheap, "popular" edition of "The Cruise of H.M.S. *Bacchante*" issued, and copies placed in every school throughout the Empire and in all public (free) libraries, but more especially in the schools.

THE ACCESSION

THE NEW SOVEREIGN PROCLAIMED

HIS FIRST PRIVY COUNCIL

Official.—From a Supplement Extraordinary to the "London Gazette," issued on Saturday, May 7, 1910.

WHITEHALL, *May* 7, 1910.

On Friday night the sixth of May instant, at a quarter to twelve o'clock, our late Most Gracious Sovereign King Edward the Seventh expired at Buckingham Palace in the sixty-ninth year of His age, and the tenth of His Reign. This event has caused one universal feeling of regret and sorrow to His late Majesty's faithful and attached subjects, to whom He was endeared by the deep interest in their welfare which He invariably manifested, as well as by the eminent and impressive virtues which illustrated and adorned His character.

Upon the intimation of this distressing event, the Lords of the Privy Council assembled this day at St. James's Palace, and gave orders for proclaiming His present Majesty, Who made a most Gracious Declaration to them, and caused all the Lords and others of the late King's Privy Council, who were then present, to be sworn of His Majesty's Privy Council.

Whereas it has pleased Almighty God to call to His Mercy our late Sovereign Lord King Edward the Seventh, of Blessed and Glorious Memory, by whose Decease the Imperial Crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland is solely and rightfully come to the High and Mighty Prince

George Frederick Ernest Albert: We, therefore, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal of this Realm, being here assisted with these of His late Majesty's Privy Council, with Numbers of other Principal Gentlemen of Quality, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens of London, do now hereby, with one Voice and Consent of Tongue and Heart, publish and proclaim, That the High and Mighty Prince George Frederick Ernest Albert is now, by the Death of our late Sovereign of Happy Memory, become our only lawful and rightful Liege Lord, George the Fifth by the Grace of God, King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Defender of the Faith, Emperor of India; To whom we do acknowledge all Faith and constant Obedience, with all hearty and humble Affection; beseeching God, by whom Kings and Queens do reign, to bless the Royal Prince George the Fifth with long and happy years to reign over Us.

Given at the Court at Saint James's, this seventh day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and ten.

ST. JAMES'S PALACE, *May* 7, 1910.

The King held his first Council to-day at St. James's Palace. Previously thereto the Lords of the Council, of whom more than one hundred were present, the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and other officials of the City of London, who attended in their robes of office, and other noblemen and gentlemen who were also present, approved a Proclamation, proclaiming His Majesty as King George V.

The Proclamation was signed by His Royal Highness Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein, the Archbishop of Canterbury, a large number of other Privy Councillors, and by the Lord Mayor and other representatives of the City.

At the Council His Majesty made a declaration which was ordered to be published, and His Majesty subsequently took and subscribed the oath for the security of the Church of Scotland.

The Privy Councillors present were then resworn of His Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council, and the Lord Chancellor, and the Lord Privy Seal, who was acting on behalf of the Lord President, took the oath of their respective offices.

Sir Almeric FitzRoy, Clerk of the Council, and Mr. J. C. Ledlie, Assistant Clerk, were in attendance.

The King arrived at the Garden Entrance at four o'clock p.m., attended by Lord Annaly and Commander Sir Charles Cust, Bt., R.N., and was received by Earl Beauchamp, Lord Steward, the Viscount Althorp, Lord Chamberlain, the Earl of Granard, Master of the Horse, Mr. W. Dudley Ward, M.P., Treasurer of the Household, the Earl of Liverpool, Comptroller of the Household, Mr. J. M. F. Fuller (Vice-Chamberlain), Captain Walter Campbell (Groom in Waiting), Lieut.-Colonel Sir Charles Frederick (Master of the Household), Colonel Sir Douglas Dawson (Comptroller of the Lord Chamberlain's Department), the Hon. Arthur Walsh (Master of the Ceremonies), Colonel Sir Arthur Davidson, and Colonel H. Streatfeild (Equerries in Waiting), and Colonel the Hon. Cecil Bingham (Silver Stick in Waiting).

His Royal Highness Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein, attended by Major Evan Martin, arrived previously, and was present at the Council.

The Duke of Fife and the Duke of Argyll also attended the Council.

HIS MAJESTY, at his first coming into the Council, was this day pleased to declare that, understanding that the law required he should at his Accession to the Crown take and subscribe the Oath relating to the security of the Church of Scotland, he was now ready to do it this first opportunity, which His Majesty was graciously pleased to do, according to the forms used by the law of Scotland, and subscribed two instruments thereof in the presence of the Lords of the Council, who witnessed the same. And His Majesty was pleased to order that one of the said instruments be transmitted to the Court of Session, to be recorded in the books of Sederunt, and afterwards to be forthwith lodged in the Public Register of Scotland, and that the other of them remain among the Records of the Council and be entered in the Council Book.

ALMERIC FITZROY.

THE KING'S "DECLARATION" TO HIS PRIVY COUNCIL

"My LORDS and GENTLEMEN.

"My heart is too full for Me to address you to-day in more than a few words. It is My sorrowful duty to announce to you the death of My dearly loved Father the King. In this irreparable loss which has so suddenly fallen upon Me and upon the whole Empire, I am comforted by the feeling that I have the sympathy of My future subjects, who will mourn with Me for their beloved Sovereign, whose own happiness was found in sharing and promoting theirs. I have lost not only a Father's love, but the affectionate and intimate relations of a dear friend and adviser. No less confident am I in the universal loving sympathy which is assured to My dearest Mother in her overwhelming grief.

"Standing here a little more than nine years ago, Our beloved King declared that as long as there was breath in his body He would work for the good and amelioration of His People. I am sure that the opinion of the whole Nation will be that this declaration has been fully carried out.

"To endeavour to follow in His footsteps, and at the same time to uphold the constitutional government of these Realms, will be the earnest object of My life. I am deeply sensible of the very heavy responsibilities which have fallen upon Me. I know that I can rely upon Parliament and upon the People of these Islands and of My Dominions beyond the Seas for their help in the discharge of these arduous duties, and for their prayers that God will grant Me strength and guidance. I am encouraged by the knowledge that I have in My dear wife one who will be a constant helpmate in every endeavour for our people's good."

Whereupon the Lords of the Council made it their humble request to His Majesty that His Majesty's Most Gracious Declaration to Their Lordships might be made public, which His Majesty was pleased to Order accordingly.

ALMERIC FITZROY.

THE KING TO THE SERVICES

To the Navy

MARLBOROUGH HOUSE, *March* 9, 1910.

It is my earnest wish, on succeeding to the Throne, to make known to the Navy how deeply grateful I am for its faithful and distinguished services rendered to the late King, my beloved father, who ever showed the greatest solicitude in its welfare and efficiency.

Educated and trained in that profession which I love so dearly, retirement from active duty has in no sense diminished my feelings of affection for it.

For thirty-three years I have had the honour of serving in the Navy, and such intimate participation in its life and work enables me to know how thoroughly I can depend upon that spirit of loyalty and zealous devotion to duty of which the glorious history of our Navy is the outcome.

That you will ever continue to be, as in the past, the foremost defender of your country's honour, I know full well, and your fortunes will always be followed by me with deep feelings of pride and affectionate interest.

GEORGE R.I.

To the Army

MARLBOROUGH HOUSE, *May* 9, 1910.

My beloved father was always closely associated with the Army by ties of strong personal attachment, and from the first day that he entered the Service he identified himself with everything conducive to its welfare.

On my accession to the Throne I take this the earliest opportunity of expressing to all ranks my gratitude for their gallant and devoted services to him.

Although I have always been interested in the Army, recent years have afforded me special opportunities of becoming more intimately acquainted with our forces both at home and in India, as well as in other parts of the Empire.

I shall watch over your interests and efficiency with continuous and keen solicitude, and shall rely upon that spirit of loyalty and devotion which has in all times animated and been the proud tradition of the British Army.

GEORGE R.I.

THE LATE KING

The first announcements which appeared in the official *Court Circular* upon the accession to the Throne of King George V were as under:

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *May* 7, 1910.

His Majesty the King passed peacefully away last evening at 11.45 o'clock.

During the last moments of His late Majesty the Archbishop of Canterbury read special prayers and conducted a short service in the King's room, at which Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, their Royal Highnesses the Prince and Princess of Wales, the Princess Royal (Duchess of Fife) and the Duke of Fife, and their Royal Highnesses the Princess Victoria and Princess Louise (Duchess of Argyll) were present.

Their Royal Highnesses the Prince and Princess of Wales, with the Princes Edward and Albert, Her

Royal Highness the Princess Royal and the Duke of Fife, with the Princesses Alexandra and Maud, their Royal Highnesses Princess Christian of Schleswig-Holstein and the Duchess of Albany, and their Highnesses Princess Victoria and Princess Marie Louise of Schleswig-Holstein visited Her Majesty Queen Alexandra to-day.

May 8.

Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, Her Royal Highness the Princess Victoria, and the ladies and gentlemen in attendance were present at Divine service in the private chapel this morning.

The service was conducted by the Rev. Canon Edgar Sheppard, D.D., Subdean of His Majesty's Chapels Royal and Domestic Chaplain.

Her Royal Highness the Princess Royal and the Duke of Fife, with the Princesses Alexandra and Maud, His Imperial Highness the Grand Duke Michael Michaïlovitch of Russia, and their Serene Highnesses the Duke and Duchess of Teck and Prince Francis of Teck visited Her Majesty to-day.

MARLBOROUGH HOUSE, *May* 8, 1910.

The King and Queen Mary, accompanied by the Duke of Cornwall, Princes Albert and George, and Princess Mary, were present this morning at Divine service at the Buckingham Palace Chapel.

Princess Christian of Schleswig-Holstein, Princess Louise (Duchess of Argyll), Princess Henry of Battenberg, the Duchess of Fife, Princesses Alexandra and Maud of Fife, Princess Louise Augusta of Schleswig-Holstein, Prince Alexander of Battenberg, and Prince Francis of Teck visited their Majesties this afternoon.

The King received the Earl of Crewe in audience yesterday.

II

MISCONCEPTIONS OF EDWARD VII AND GEORGE V

Probably no one, unless it were the omniscient Lord Esher, the Admirable Crichton of the Court of St. James's, had the prescience, the audacity, to whisper in the Sovereign's ear on New Year's Day, 1914: "Sir, beware the ides of March!" Yet that month witnessed the rise of the curtain on the most memorable episode of King George's then barely four years' reign; while the following August found us at war—the war which in the same month of 1917 entered upon its fourth year.

In Edward VII we had admittedly one of the greatest kings in our history. King George V entered on the fifth year of his amazing reign in May, 1914, and from March in that year his name was more frequently on men's lips than it had been during the whole period of his sovereignty. The present time, then (for on May 6, 1917, he completed his first septennate), seems to be an appropriate one for glancing at some of his characteristics, instituting something of a comparsion of the son with the father, and noting a few of those events in his life which most strike and appeal to the popular imagination and the popular, and occasionally vague, conception of the kingship.*

At the outset of each reign, the qualifications of

---

* *Vide* the discussion in the Press, in April and May, 1917, on Monarchies and Republics.

King Edward and his successor were misconceived and, in a certain measure, misinterpreted or misunderstood. In the case of Edward VII the doubts generally expressed of his fitness to rule the Empire were dispelled before he had been on the throne many weeks. It was not quite so with his son, who was, and remained for an appreciable period, overshadowed to a certain extent by the ever-present figure in memory of his predecessor. Perhaps it was only in 1914 that he began to display those qualities which are associated in the public mind with the perfect kingship. We cannot form a true conception of the Sovereign without taking into full account the disabilities which handicapped him from the hour of his accession, so unexpected by the Empire. That these were of a formidable nature, none more fully realised than himself. But he grappled with and overcame them—at what cost to himself can only be surmised. His apprenticeship was in striking contrast with that of his father, who for the greater part of his life was acquiring a knowledge of what he spoke of to the late Russian Ambassador (Count Benckendorff) and the late Italian Ambassador (Signor Pansa) as his *métier*: "Mon métier est Roi."

The training of George V differed in every particular from that of his more fortunate father; moreover, their characters were totally dissimilar, their tastes as far asunder as the poles, and their ideas in general varied. In his Message to the Services (May 9, 1910) the King said: "For thirty-three years I have had the honour of serving in the Navy." Those words explained much, and enabled us to realise more than anything else could have done the grave difficulties which have beset and hampered him in the first seven years of his rulership. Certainly, during his father's reign of a little more than nine years, he had been initiated into some of the arts—perhaps some of the artifices—and practices of the kingly "trade," the "Guild" of which all the wearers of crowns are members. That was an advantage, but how insignificant in value when compared with his father's forty years' training!

The King has had the inestimable advantage of being surrounded by a number of men highly skilled in all State affairs, and what many may regard as of greater importance, the ways of the world. A knowledge of Court fripperies is not very difficult of acquisition. A number of subordinates will put a newly appointed official through his facings in a very short time; but those who are at the Sovereign's elbow, in his bureau, from early morn until the approach of midnight, must be men with exceptional aptitude for their onerous task. There is the Private Secretary, whose tact, talents, perspicuity, and general knowledge of men and their characters ought to equal those of a Prime Minister, Foreign Minister, and Home Minister combined. He must be "well up" in matters naval and military. Such qualities are rarely found united in one individual. Lord Stamfordham may not possess all these gifts in the same proportion, but he is endowed with most of them to an exceptional extent.

For what may be considered the "success" of the monarch, the Private Secretary is largely responsible. He does not occupy a well-paid sinecure, as so many are apt to believe. The daily clerical work alone required of him would surprise many of His Majesty's subjects who are disposed to complain of their own arduous lot. Since Queen Victoria's death, the work devolving upon the Secretary has increased quite fourfold, although Sir Henry Ponsonby found his burden sufficiently heavy during his long tenure of the office.

Besides conducting the King's private correspondence and his personal affairs, the Secretary has to deal with the boxes (sent daily from most of the Government offices) of documents, orders, warrants, and directions requiring the Sovereign's immediate attention and signature. There is scarcely a question of precedent, etiquette, change of Army and Navy uniform, or detail of the various military and civilian orders and decorations that does not come under the King's personal supervision and direction. The speedy return of "papers" which have been submitted for the Sovereign's signature is a marvel even to those who have held confidential positions in Government offices. The drudgery of all this daily detail is greatly lightened for the King by the possession of an official so trustworthy, experienced, tactical, and withal good-tempered as is Lord Stamfordham, and as was Lord Knollys. The Secretary naturally has to deal extensively in negatives—to depose insistency on the one hand and intrusion on the other, and to do this with a light and graceful, yet a firm and dignified, hand. It may seem superfluous to say that most of the correspondence is typed. But many letters are still written by the Secretary himself: this was Lord Knollys's amiable mode of answering certain correspondents, and Lord Stamfordham continues it.

The tone and conduct of a monarch may be materially influenced by his *personnel.* It has been so with the two enemy European Emperors. King Edward was not particularly sensitive to that influence—his autocratic idiosyncrasies were too strongly developed to allow the opinions of others, with very few exceptions, to prevail, either in great or small matters. He knew his strength, and those around him recognised it. With his successor it is otherwise. When he ascended the throne he was under forty-five, and, apart from what he had learnt from his father, everything was new to him. He had to begin his education in empire-governing at the lowermost rung of the ladder. The nature of the *personnel* therefore was of supreme importance. Fortunately, out of regard for their late master, and warm esteem for his son, the "Old Guard" remained almost intact during the first portion of the new reign, and as one or other fell out of the ranks their places were filled by His Majesty with discrimination and judgment; so that the royal *entourage* has left little, if anything, to be desired. Perhaps George V has not lost much by having had about him for mentor no Baron Stockmar, who, by her wise uncle Leopold's desire, supervised the political education of Queen Victoria. No reasonable exception can be taken to any of those composing the Sovereign's personal staff, some few of whom only are indicated here, although others are worthy of inclusion in the record.

Among the men in closest contact with the

Sovereign, a keen judge of character, are Lord Stamfordham, Lord Farquhar, Lord Esher, Sir Ernest Cassel, Lord Derby, Mr. Arthur Walsh (a scintillating Master of the Ceremonies), the Duke of Portland, and, not to prolong the list, the still active prince of Royal Secretaries, Lord Knollys, always at call in case of need. The late Marquis de Breteuil, whose co-operation in diplomatic tangles King Edward highly valued, was conspicuous among King George's Continental friends, and was mainly responsible for that curious and delightful "interview" with the Prince of Wales related by M. André de Fouquières with so much verve, and given in this volume. The reflection, after reading it, forces itself upon one that what may not be done in this direction at home may, in certain exceptional circumstances, be done abroad.

"Farquhar" is still, and deservedly, a household word at the Palaces. This Peer has many claims to the envied distinction of being perhaps the King's closest friend, as he had been of our late Sovereign and also of the Duke of Fife, whose "best man" he was at the Duke's wedding. Thanks to him, too, in conjunction with Sir Ernest Cassel and Lord Esher, the business affairs of Edward VII were placed on a satisfactory footing, "straightened out."

Lord Esher, who for more than a year (1916–1917) has been in the war zone, was the Sovereign's "handy man," a part which he played with distinction and skill, and will probably play again. It was amusingly said of this gifted son of one of our ablest Judges that His Majesty could not very well get on without him. As a former M.P. for Penryn and Falmouth, and private secretary to the late Marquis of Hartington (Duke of Devonshire) for seven years, Lord Esher became familiar with the political *coulisses*, a fact of itself commending him to both King Edward and his son. He is, moreover, a voluminous writer of very frank argumentative letters to the Press; an author of mark ("Footprints of Statesmen"); and the editor of "Queen Victoria's Correspondence" and "The Childhood" of Her late Majesty. In 1915 he instructed us on the "influence" of Edward VII—a fine theme for one who can treat it, as he does, with knowledge, authority, and circumspection devoid of prudishness.

While certain authors have made great running with their "stories" of Queen Victoria and King Edward, anecdotists must possess their souls in patience for a while before attempting to illustrate the gayer side of George V's temperament in more or less humorous fashion. I am advised that there is in the new Palace circle no "Billy" Russell to set the table in a roar as in the old days when that accomplished "droll" would assume the cap and bells at a hint from his illustrious patron. Nor are there in the flesh any "Dupplins," "Jo" Aylesfords, George Russells, or Count "Sherry-and-Whiskys" wherewith the zealous chronicler may still diversify his pages, point his morals, and adorn his tales. All these were of the Edwardian age, and have left behind them nothing but their names—names unknown to the new generation.

Edward VII could not endure being thwarted or criticised in even the minutest matter. His illustrious son is unmoved by all that is said about him.

If he does not know his Schiller, the Queen does, and she cannot have forgotten this passage:

> Es liebt die Welt das Strahlende zu schwarzen
> Und das Erhabene in den Staub zu ziehen.*

Impassiveness is a marked characteristic of King George. "Calm," said Matthew Arnold, "is good, but calm's not all." The King's serenity, equability, is accompanied by will-power of iron strength. Once he has made up his mind to do or not to do a thing he is inflexible. Surrounded by advisers, he has kept his own counsel. Since May 6, 1910, he has been forming himself. He knew much, but he has been adding to his knowledge every day, qualifying himself to steer the ship of State. He has done his duty to the Empire in years of unparalleled stress, and the Empire is grateful to him.

The King is an expert in *l'art d'étonner*. Louis XV boasted: "Si j'était lieutenant de police j'interderais les cabriolets." It cannot now be said of George V, as Mercy-Argenteau asserted of the French sovereign: "Le Roi a très peu de crédit dans les affaires de l'état."

We remember King Edward's righteous anger when, in 1907, being in Dublin, he learnt the particulars of the theft of the Crown Jewels. Having less control of his temper than his son, his language on that occasion was extra-parliamentary, partly for the reason that in the particular circumstances he could do nothing. The abstraction of the St. Patrick's regalia was, however, a bagatelle compared with the Parliamentary events of nearly seven years later—events which might have led King Edward to impulsively taking some step which he would have rued the day afterwards.

---

* The world delights to smirch the radiant splendour
And drag sublimity along the dust.

The King not only has the air of a studious man—he is one and has been from his youth. He is, naturally, less bookish than he was before his accession, but he still reads a great deal besides the thirty newspapers which he is said to peruse—perhaps necessarily somewhat perfunctorily—daily. Most people know what it is to get through half a dozen papers a day; but thirty! In his sumptuous volume on King Edward the late Sir Richard Holmes, for many years Librarian at Windsor Castle—a post now admirably filled by the Hon. John Fortescue—tells an amusing story of the present King: "I was Royal Librarian when King George was a boy, and gave him books to read. He preferred those which treated of naval subjects. He liked to paint the engravings, even those in *éditions de luxe*, giving the coverings of a horse a green tint, and painting a cow red and an elephant yellow."

The Sovereign is also a noted collector. He has long been renowned as the principal philatelist in the Empire, and has spent a fortune on rare postage stamps. His collection is said to rival that known as the "Tapling," now in the British Museum. In 1895 King Edward authorised him to accept the presidency of the London Philatelic Society. The congratulatory letters and telegrams which King George received on his accession to the throne are contained in an enormous album.

Although the King, unlike his father, is a past master in the art of concealing the emotions, those who are privileged to observe closely the First Gentleman who to a large extent sways our destinies have not failed to notice, especially of late, that drawn expression of the features which at times makes itself manifest on the faces of even the most stoical participants of the *Sturm und Drang* of existence. Even Prince Bismarck and Napoleon III, adepts in the art of concealing their feelings, occasionally betrayed themselves; and it is possible to gather the mental state of two hostile Emperors by the movement of their lineaments. While the King's self-possession is one of his prominent traits, something more than the semblance of a cloud now and then displaces his normal sunny expression. But the eclipse is only momentary: "Post nubila, Phœbus."

Nothing deters His Majesty from expressing what he thinks. In the last days of July, 1914, when the Austrian troops were marching to Belgrade, the King said, in his quiet, forcible way: "However much we may regret the assassination of the Archduke, *he was a firebrand*." It is an example of the "art of astonishing."

The clouds which overhung the Palace in 1909 and reappeared later offer a study in contrasts. They reduced Edward VII almost to the *néant*; he became, to the general astonishment, fretful and almost morose, as well as apprehensive for the future of the monarchy. The King's portentous words, "My son may reign, but my grandson never will," which, when made public, were received with indignant incredulity, were spoken in the presence of the late Lord Suffield, who repeated them unreservedly, and as if they had made little impression upon him. That is how they got into print, into "King Edward in his True Colours."

When the political barometer first stood at "storm" in 1914, previous to the Austrian menace to Serbia, King George was not unduly depressed, but went about his weighty daily task composedly, confident that he and his Ministers were diligently, although ineffectually, striving to evolve order out of chaos. For more than seven years he has continuously devoted himself to the discharge of the ever-pressing duties of his office. He has taken the nation captive by participating in its everyday life, in the sports of the people—cricket, aviation, racing, and athletics. And on the night of a State ball he was handed by Prince Arthur of Connaught a momentous telegram containing—the result of the fisticuffs at Olympia! The opera, the theatre, the "halls," the concert-rooms—all forms of national entertainment have had his countenance, and also the Queen's. The freaks of "the ladies" at Covent Garden did not ruffle his habitual equanimity. The polite ejaculation, "You Russian Tsar up there!" to employ a tolerated colloquialism, "left him cold." His attitude during the war, his four visits to the troops at the front, and at home, his frequent tours through the country, his examples to his subjects—all these are dwelt upon in this volume, necessarily imperfectly, but with a view to inculcating in all hearty loyalty to the Monarchy and its beloved representative.

King George has a "wiriness" which was never a characteristic of his father, and can withstand bodily fatigue which would have told upon Edward VII even in his most robust period. It is sometimes asserted that His Majesty's bearing lacks the impressiveness—the rather overpowering impressiveness—which distinguished his father; and that one is less kingly than the other exteriorly. But in the slight and still boyish figure of George V there is a something which compels the admiration of the crowd and commands our respect. Combined with this is a very taking bluffness. No one looks better than His Majesty in uniform and well mounted, although he has never been so inured to riding as was his father from his youth until well into middle age.

III

As in the last reign, so in the present one much of the Private Secretary's precious time is occupied by answering correspondents who betray anxiety for the Sovereign's spiritual weal. Here is the secretary of the Scripture Gift Mission writing direct to Lord Knollys while he was still in office:

> My Lord,—I have cut the enclosed extract from a periodical. It interests me much, and I am venturing to approach your lordship to know whether the report [that the King followed the practice of daily Bible reading] can be confirmed.
>
> The reason I ask this question is that in connection with our work we have a "Pocket Testament League," which is a union of those who promise to read a chapter of the Word of God daily, and to carry a Testament with them.
>
> Apologising for trespassing upon your lordship's time, I am,
>
> Your lordship's obedient servant,
>
> Francis C. Brading.

Lord Knollys replies:

> Dear Sir,—I have had the honour of submitting your letter of the 15th inst. to the King, and I am directed to inform you

in reply: It is quite true that he promised Queen Alexandra as long ago as 1881 that he would read a chapter of the Bible daily, and that he has ever since adhered to this promise.

Yours very truly,

KNOLLYS.

But the matter does not end here. The newspapers want something more; so Mr. Brading is interviewed and says his say thus:

> He was thankful to receive, in these days when in some quarters it was considered "smart" to swear at the Bible, the testimony of the Royal example of pious adherence to a truly Christian practice. It would encourage the members of the Pocket Testament League, a world-wide movement, to adhere closely to their obligation, and the promulgation of the fact that the King was not ashamed of his Bible should have its effect in stimulating active membership of the organisation. The League already has a membership of several hundred thousands, its adherents being found in all parts of the world, and including all classes of society. In both the Army and Navy it has many adherents. Undoubtedly many people have been led by the noble example of the King to make Bible reading a daily practice.

A number of people wrote to His Majesty personally, thanking him for sanctioning the publication of the statement, which "had given a remarkable impetus to the organisations which promote Bible study."

At the January (1913) meeting of the Council of the Sunday School Union a "memorial" to the King was adopted and sent, expressing "profound gratitude for the announcement of His Majesty's habit of daily reading a chapter of the Bible, and invoking the Divine blessing on the Royal Family."

Lord Knollys wrote:

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *Feb.* 8, 1913.

SIR,--I have had the honour of submitting to the King the address which I have received from the officers and Council of the Sunday School Union, and I am directed in reply to thank them cordially for their memorial and their loyal sentiments.

I am further desired by the King to express His Majesty's earnest hope that continued success may attend the labours both of the Sunday School Union and the International Bible Reading Association in their useful and beneficent work, which cannot fail to add to the increase of Christianity throughout the world.

I am, Sir, your obedient servant,

KNOLLYS.

The King's frank admission of the Bible habit went to the hearts of millions who still remain true to the faith of their fathers.

Sometimes, but fortunately not often, the heads of religious organisations, affected by the *maladie de la plume,* address the Sovereign in this strain:

PROTESTANT ALLIANCE,
430 STRAND, W.C.
August 15, 1913.

To His Most Gracious Majesty King George V.

SIRE,—In the *Tablet* of May 31, 1913, a leading official Roman Catholic newspaper published in England, on page 864 it is reported that: "Again our good King-Emperor, having changed the capital of India from Calcutta in the East to Delhi in the North, has kindly given 15 acres of land in the new capital on which to build a pro-cathedral, college, convent, and schools." Remembering the promise made by your Majesty at your Coronation that your Majesty would be a "faithful Protestant," my committee feel that there must be some mistake in the report as related above, and should be glad to learn that your Majesty has not given "fifteen acres of land" on which to build a Roman Catholic "pro-cathedral, college, convent, and schools."

I am, Sire, your obedient servant,
(Signed) HENRY FOWLER,
Secretary.

The Private Secretary (Lord Stamfordham) pithily replied:

BALMORAL CASTLE,
August 24, 1913.

To Henry Fowler, Esq.,
Secretary, Protestant Alliance.

DEAR SIR,—In reply to your letter of the 22nd August, which, together with its enclosure dated 15th August, reached me to-day, the letter has been laid before the King, and I regret to inform you that I cannot give you any information respecting the announcement quoted by you from the *Tablet* of the 31st May, 1913.

There is no land in Delhi which is at the personal disposal of His Majesty.

Yours faithfully,
(Signed) STAMFORDHAM.

"De minimis non curat lex." Newspaper editors might lay the maxim well to heart, and not worry poor Lord Stamfordham with letters inquiring as to the truth (!) of a statement, attributed to a worthy Dean, that "he had heard that King George made it a rule never to travel on Sundays unless it was absolutely necessary." The P.S. laconically replied: "The answer is in the affirmative." Then this weighty scrap of "news" re-appears in the papers, with such attractive headings as "The King and Sunday—His Majesty on Sunday Travel," and the name of the journal which was the first to print something which everybody knew is published all over the land!

The letters written by the King's command, and here cited, evidence the deep interest taken by His Majesty in the religious life of the nation. To Prebendary Carlile, of the Church Army, the King said (December, 1910): "I long to help all my people, and I wish I could do so. My heart goes out to them."

In a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury (April 9, 1912) the King dwelt upon the need for an increase in the number of Chaplains of the Indian diocese. Instances of His Majesty's activities in this direction might be multiplied indefinitely. I have written of Edward VII that he favoured "cheerful Protestant" services. The same may be said of George V.

In 1913 the Archbishop of Sydney and Mrs. Wright were in London, and on July 8 His Grace gave a stirring account of his travels to an immense gathering in the Concordia Hall, Sydney. Narrating his conversation with King George at Buckingham Palace, the Archbishop said:

"It will be one of the memories that will always be among the treasures of my life. My impression of him was that he was a *man*—that he was one of the most vigorous, alert personalities that you could wish to meet; that he was one who mastered the details of the great Empire over which he was set by God; and also that he is one who has a very warm place in his heart for Australia. I recollect how I passed from his audience. I had said to him, 'Sir, I go straight from here this day on my way back to Australia. I start by mail to-night.' And he said, 'Tell them in Australia that I follow their progress with all my heart; that their interests are my interests, and give them my greetings.'" (The audience here rose and heartily sang "God Save the King," with three cheers for His Majesty.) "I am sure," said the Archbishop, "that will gladden the heart of His Majesty if he hears of it. I know my interview was due to the fact that I came from Australia, and represented the Church in Australia as its Primate."

One of the King's intimate friends, being asked if His Majesty's speeches were not "all written for him by his secretary or some other member of the *entourage*," replied: "Not at all, I assure you. King George is not the man to put up with that kind of thing." An address delivered by His Majesty in the year of his father's death contained a sentence which clings to the memory and was made the subject of this eloquent tribute by Father Bernard Vaughan in 1910 at a conference at Caxton Hall, Westminster, on public morals, presided over by the Bishop of Ripon:

> I was very much wedded to a poem which I wanted to recite to you this afternoon, but all my poetry has been burned up by the words of fire which have been uttered to the nation by our Sailor King. It seems to me as if I can read upon the white walls of England, the cliffs of Dover, the message from the King—"The foundations of our national glory are set in the homes of the people." I do wish, ladies and gentlemen, to put aside all light poetry to consider these weighty words of prose. They come to us most opportunely, and they carry in them the freshness of the sea breeze from our dreadnought King. I wish the essayist and moralist would take these words for their subject—"The foundations of our national glory are set in the homes of the people." I wish that our leader-writers and platform speakers might take this for their topic—"The foundations of our national greatness are set in the homes of the people." I should like every church and chapel in the

United Kingdom to have this text from the Throne read out continuously. If our national glory is to endure, if it is to occupy a place in the eye of the world, let us look to its foundations. That seafaring people, the inhabitants of Venice, felt so gloriously proud about their Duomo, with its fair and well-proportioned tower, that they lived in its glory. It would have been better if they had looked to the foundations instead of to the superstructure. They gazed upon it in their delight till it was in a heap of ruins at their feet. And I think that we of England—of dear, dear England—are so absorbed in our past greatness, in our present prosperity, that we refuse to look to the foundations upon which our national glory rests. On an occasion like this, I think it is opportune for us to pause and spend a few moments probing and searching those foundations which must be strong and massive if they are to support the greatest empire the world has ever seen. I know that we prefer, instead of being like lions, to emulate the example of the ostrich. But I feel like a lion. We have all a bit of the wild beast in us. *Mine is the British lion.*

No Madame de Thèbes, "palmist and prophetess," is likely to "read the character" of George V as she read that of his father (when he was Prince of Wales) by examining the lines of his hand, and giving him the excellent, but scarcely novel, advice to "take care of his digestion." Nor, I believe, has King George ever at any time had his father's curiosity to be experimented upon by a "thought reader," although King Edward, as Prince, received at Marlborough House that talented professor of the art, Mr. Stuart Cumberland, whose royal "clients" were numerous. "What am I thinking of now ?" asked the Prince. "You are thinking, Sir, of an elephant without a tail," was the reply ; and the future monarch admitted the accuracy of the answer. Unfortunately, Mr. Cumberland confided the details of the *séance* to one of the best-known of then living London editors, Mr.

Stead,* who wrote for his paper a few lines (illustrated by a " picture " of the tailless animal) which greatly annoyed the Prince, who summoned Mr. Cumberland, to complain : " *I have been made to look ridiculous* by what has been published in the *Pall Mall Gazette* ! "

King Edward was intent upon his sons acquiring French and German, and sent them to Lausanne for that purpose. The younger boy passed from thence to Heidelberg, where he spent several months as the guest of Professor von Ihne, without, however, matriculating at the university. Herr von Ihne had made the acquaintance of the King's father while teaching at the Liverpool Institute. After his return to Germany he became a professor at Heidelberg, and King George enjoyed a sojourn at his home, which stood picturesquely on a promontory overlooking the Neckar. The royal visitor naturally chafed under the necessity of moving almost exclusively in the society of the elder men, and longed for the companionship of the students and participation in their historic customs. This was vouchsafed to him on only one occasion. When his host took him to attend the 500th anniversary of Heidelberg University the Prince was placed at the table of honour. While the celebration was in progress, however, he contrived to slip away to where the younger men were sitting, and later he joined a group of students for the purpose, as he said, of " enjoying a real ' beer-talk '." The King's knowledge of French is quite adequate for practically all purposes, and his pronunciation is admittedly excellent. He has no difficulty in sustaining a conversation, and writes the language well. His German is less perfect; still, he can speak and read it with facility. But, if I am correctly informed, he has from the beginning of the war loathed the German language and everything and everybody associated with Hunnism, his cousin, the inhuman, sanguinary, and perpetually lying Kaiser, of course included.

---

* Died heroically on board the wrecked *Titanic*.

IV

CALUMNIES REFUTED

A volume could, and perhaps some day will, be written entitled "Calumnies on Emperors, Empresses, Kings, Queens, Princes, and Princesses." King Edward had to face a storm of Press and Pulpit animadversion, while in the early seventies certain illustrated "Annuals" vilely lampooned him and Queen Victoria.

Long before his accession lying stories were told even in "society" in disparagement of King George. It was insistently said that he had been married before his alliance with Princess May, and even that, to quote the words of the late Mr. Stead, in the *Review of Reviews* (July, 1912), he was "a person of intemperate habits." These latter wicked calumnies had been publicly denied by Lord Rosebery, the Dean of Norwich, and others before their denial in detail by Mr. Stead.

The article on King George which appeared in the *Review of Reviews* only two months and one week after the death of Edward VII was entitled

HIS LATE MAJESTY KING EDWARD VII
Bust by Alfred Drury, R.A.
By permission of the sculptor

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

"The Personal Character of the New King," and the following are extracts from it:

> There has never been, so far as I can ascertain after a rigorous examination of the stories current, even the shadow of a foundation for the cruel calumny of which the King has been the subject.
>
> I will go further and say that, so far as I can ascertain, so far from being given to intemperance, George V is probably *the most abstemious King who has ever ascended the English Throne.* I do not say that he is a Good Templar or a Rechabite, or a pledged teetotaller. But I do say with confidence, on the authority of men who know him intimately, who have lived with him, dined with him, supped with him, that, although he sometimes takes a glass of wine, his usual beverages are distilled or mineral water, and milk. Some have gone so far as to assure me that he has not allowed a drop of alcohol to cross his lips for two years. This is an exaggeration. Others profess to have seen him take a night-cap of whisky and soda. But the evidence of those who know him best is that *there is not a man more abstemious in the use of intoxicants among all the millions who own his sway.*
>
> How the legend can have arisen I cannot say. For the usual suggestion that he may have sworn off lately is put out of court by the positive assurances which I have received from those who have known him from his youth up. *He has never been given to excess of any kind.* He was not given to excess either as a youth when at sea or as a man. When he entered upon his public duties he was not even under temptation to drink. He did not like it, and it did not like him. A little light wine at lunch or dinner, and sometimes a thimbleful of whisky with soda-water or milk afterwards, constitute the maximum of his potations. *And as he is now, so he has been all his life—sober, temperate, abstemious.*

Having thus disposed of the "intemperance" stories, and remarked that he wrote "on the authority of men who know him [the King] intimately," Mr. Stead dealt at length with "the story that King George contracted at Malta a marriage with the daughter or niece of some

Admiral." Seventeen years before the King's accession Mr. Stead [he told his readers] had "examined the grounds for this legend, going so far as to approach King Edward" on the subject. Stead's narrative proceeds:

> I submitted to a mutual friend *a series of questions to the late King*, who was then Prince of Wales. They were very precise, categorical, and covered the whole ground from A to Z. The King, then, as always, was very courteous, and expressed his utmost readiness to go into the whole matter. In reply *I received a most categorical, definite, emphatic repudiation of the whole story.* He [the King] denied absolutely the story of the alleged marriage, morganatic or otherwise. He asked, not unnaturally, if the Prince were married, as was alleged, where was the marriage register, and who was the clergyman who performed the illegal ceremony? If the lady in question was an Admiral's daughter, could it be believed that her father tolerated a clandestine marriage conducted in defiance of the law without the knowledge of the Prince's parents? He also pointed out the various other inherent improbabilities of the story, and finally gave me his most positive assurance that the story was a lie from beginning to end, and what is more, a lie so ridiculous that it could not impose upon any one with the slightest knowledge of the Royal Family, or of the Navy, or of the Church.
>
> Since then I have made further inquiries and have been satisfied in my own mind that there is not and has never been any foundation for the story. When the marriage with Princess May was announced, the Archbishop of Canterbury was snowed under with letters of protest from all parts of the world where the legend of the Malta marriage had penetrated. How could he, how dared he, make himself a party to such a crime in the eyes of God and of man? Such was the question asked in ever-increasing crescendo of virtuous indignation. The answer is obvious. The Archbishop and the other clergy who were to take part in the ceremony could not, and dare not, officiate in celebrating what would have been a bigamous union. They made the most minute investigations into the whole story. They pursued every clue that was offered them. They asked every one who professed to believe the story to state the grounds of their belief, and then they

carefully pursued the trail of testimony till they ran the legend to earth. I am assured by one who himself took part in the investigation that, although they investigated patiently every scrap of evidence, they never could get nearer to first-hand evidence than that somebody's cousin had been there and had seen the ceremony performed. But, despite all their searchings, they never could come upon that cousin himself. Somebody's cousin, who was everybody's cousin, never could be located. He remained to the end, as he remains to-day, impersonal, impalpable, the mysterious unknown, who is responsible for the paternity of *the most amazing falsehood of modern times.*

The Primate did not perform the ceremony without having taken every conceivable pains to ascertain the facts from the King himself. *The late King and Queen Victoria were absolutely certain there was no truth in the tale*, and the King always ridiculed the story as one of the most absurd of all fables. In the course of these archiepiscopal and episcopal and clerical investigations, the investigators were satisfied, from the unanimous testimony of the naval officers who served with the King in the Mediterranean at the time when the alleged marriage took place, not merely that there never had been a marriage, but that there never had been a liaison of any kind with Miss S——, or any one else, and that therefore there could not have been any of the alleged children. The net result of the inquiry was to satisfy the Primate and the other distinguished clerics who had to perform the official and public marriage that the young man had never been married before, that *he had lived an exemplary moral life*, and that the whole story about the existence of any children resulting from his alleged relations with Miss S—— was absolutely without foundation. There were no such relations, morganatic, illegitimate, or otherwise, and there were no children.

"The whole of the fairy story," comments Mr. Stead, "falls to the ground." The matter was brought [he says] to the attention of the present King, "who treated it, as all the rest of the family treated it, as one of those absurd fictions apparently invented for the purpose of testing the gullibility of the public." "I have taken some pains [adds the writer] to nail this lie to the counter, and I hope that after the publication of this article we shall hear no more either about the intemperance of the King or about his bigamy."

It so happened that we heard a great deal more about the alleged "bigamy," for in January, 1911, the arch-villain Mylius was criminally prosecuted by the Crown for publishing the same libel, and, upon conviction, was sentenced to a year's imprisonment, but was released before the expiration of his sentence.

THE KING OUTRAGEOUSLY LIBELLED BY SO-CALLED IRISH PROTESTANTS

An article entitled "The Mob Monarchists" appeared in the London weekly journal the *Nation* on September 13, 1913, and on September 20 the editor, Mr. Massingham, a very able writer, who was in the glare of publicity a few months ago, courteously devoted considerable space to what I felt constrained to say on the subject. The article in question, as I pointed out, showed, as it had not before been shown in the Press, the exact position of the Sovereign in the Home Rule crisis prevalent in 1913, and gave His Majesty the credit which was, and is, his due in regard to his great capacity, a priceless inheritance from his father. I quote a few lines from that remarkable "Mob Monarchists" essay in the belief that it escaped many who will read these pages:

> If the King took sides in State politics, his personality would cease to have the kind of sentimental and emotional sanctity which is its shield, and would come into the political arena as one of the elements of the struggle, and indeed as the most

vital element of all. As things stand, the King avoids this dangerous clash by exercising privately, and without the knowledge of more than a few score persons, great powers of persuasive criticism, modification, and delay. By dint of these he makes his character felt, and gives it the weight of the traditional, though now modified, authority of the Crown. If he were persuaded to add to these functions a claim to reject the advice of his Ministers on the counsels of the Opposition, and thus to stand between a Ministry and the House of Commons, which gave them its confidence, the status of the Monarchy would immediately become a matter of controversy. for everybody knows that the force thus invoked would, in the nature of things, be a Conservative force. That, indeed, is the reason why the King is being thus grossly tempted to betray his Ministry.

I should like (I continued) to see the above passage reproduced in the Conservative Press, for there can be no question of its accuracy. There would appear to be people who imagine that, by presenting the King with a document naïvely "requesting" (!) him to do so-and-so, His Majesty will forthwith leap into the breach, and thus heroically save the situation! These well-meaning but injudicious requisitionists are labouring under a delusion. In constitutional countries violent changes in the order of things are not effected in this easy fashion. There are, I know, people who imagine the King to be somewhat of an automaton—an easy-going monarch who, "to save trouble," as they say on the cricket practice ground, would readily grant the mild "request" of a group of petitioners that, on the occasion of a crisis like that then (1913) prevailing, he should say to his Prime Minister: "We have had enough of this worry. Unless you dissolve Parliament forthwith and go to the country, I shall do it myself."

"The letters published in the papers since the Ascot meeting (1913) prove that there are many people who imagine that it is quite possible for the Sovereign to take such a short cut, Constitution or no Constitution. Such people are probably thoroughly loyal subjects, but profoundly ignorant of the conditions under which British monarchs reign. They may have read the letters of leading authorities on constitutional law, precedent, and practice which have been appearing in the papers without deriving overmuch enlightenment therefrom. If so, we must not be hard upon them, for the Party Press is divided in opinion upon the pronouncements of these same authorities."

I also called attention to another matter, not, so far as I had seen, hitherto noticed.

In 1912 I was given by a friend two leaflets, which he had just received by post at a leading West-End club, with a very large British and foreign membership. As the leaflets were addressed to the club in question, it is fair to assume that they were also sent to other clubs. They contain the vilest language concerning the King that the minds of men or devils could conceive.

On them is the announcement: "Printed and published from the originals by the Protestant Reform League, Belfast. No Popery at Home and no Home Rule in Ireland. 300,000 determined men say so."

I append some extracts from these leaflets:

> This King of yours added still more to his own shame by surreptitiously sending me (a Nazarite), through my publishers, a most . . . . reprehensible concoction of . . . . slander, such as deserves drastic and public punishment in

any individual. . . . In this as in other things he is too great . . . . to realize that Almighty God sees every secret, that He Himself is the Judge who dispenses justice where man's law fails, and that so criminal a document meant shame and confusion to the guilty, especially when sent to a man of God. Indeed, the malignant spite, peculiar construction, and . . . . language needed no great acumen to see where it came from. After showing the . . . . effusion to certain friends, who instantly saw the culprit, it should be now in the possession of the Rt. Hon. A. J. Balfour.

PROTESTANTS OF ENGLAND.—The gilded . . . . who misoccupies your throne. . . . If this . . . . King had any sense and faith at all, he would abdicate without waiting for God to put him and his family's sins to deeper shame, knowing that the House of Hanover is doomed. To insult me in my authorised work shows the soul of a . . . . , and can only result in punishment by God both here and hereafter. Who among you can prove me a coward, a liar, or a fool? . . . Not the vile and blasphemous charges written and sent by your . . . . of a King. . . . Truly and faithfully I have served Christ and Protestant Christianity, and will so continue to serve without the least regard for any number of . . . . Guelphs, move they earth and hell to block the righteous course of God's truth, honour, and justice, and keep themselves whitewashed before a too-fond public.

These Guelphs have been given every opportunity to forward God's justice; they mock and deride Him. He has turned against them, and the wickedness is entirely their own, not mine. Nor shall they grossly insult me with impunity. God made me a *soldier* with strength to *hit hard.* Any evil beyond my power *He Himself* will chastise. Would *you* have your faithful servant grossly ill-treated for upwards of *twenty years*?

What Republican France flung out the King of Protestant England gorges. Poor England, ... who doesn't know any better. What would his Grandmother say?

This last paragraph is printed under an "illustration" entitled "The . . . . Kisses the Scarlet Woman."

Another "illustration" shows a huge animal prone on the ground. This has for headlines the words, in capitals: "King George. . . . And not a drop of English blood in his . . . ." Underneath the "picture" we read: "End of the . . . . of Hanover."

The main object of these leaflets was certainly to insult, vilify, and bring into contempt the King; but, as is made quite clear by the announcement printed on them, they emanated from some person or persons who declared that they would have "No Popery at Home and no Home Rule in Ireland. 300,000 determined men say so." If ever a man deserved to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, it is the crazy wretch who indited and circulated these lying leaflets under the specious pretext that he was serving the cause of Protestantism!

One of the most cogent and admiringly critical appreciations of the Prince who became our King four years later was that which (June 2, 1906) graced that increasingly influential journal, the *Daily Express*, *à propos* of the then Heir-Apparent's forty-second birthday.

> It is perfectly true [said the writer] that the Prince of Wales's circle of friends is far smaller and less representative than that which for half a century had always surrounded the King; that his personal sympathies and constant touch with the peoples and interests of other European nations are less remarkable; that his facilities for speaking foreign languages are less natural and have been less cultivated; that his aptitude for quickly familiarising himself with new faces and circumstances and for impressing such on his memory is less extraordinary—in a word, that he does not possess in so marked a degree those simple yet supreme abilities which have carried his august father to the highest pinnacle of European popularity. All this may be quite arguable; yet it must not be forgotten that the very limitations thereby suggested in the Prince of Wales go far to form a character and shape a career which will always appeal closely to the sense of British people. It is not to accuse the Prince of insularity to say that for him Great Britain,

with her vast dependencies, is the chief object of his thoughts. It is not to accuse him of narrowness to say that his home is for him the sun and centre of his happiness. It is not to accuse him of want of sympathy to say that, perhaps from an exaggerated sense of modesty, he sometimes fails to appreciate the pleasure which the mere sight of him gives to his future people. If such traits are faults, they are faults for which one would exchange many so-called virtues.

In years to come, when the true verdict of posterity is recorded, it may be well said of George Prince of Wales that his best qualities and parts were those that formed the foundation of his character; that as foundation stones they were withdrawn from view; but that with time as their witness and friend, he has in the distribution of true fame nothing to forfeit, everything to receive.

In the upwards of eleven years that have elapsed since this tribute to the Sovereign of to-day was penned it is undeniable that His Majesty highly and fully "appreciates the pleasure which the mere sight of him gives to his people." Since that black summer of 1910 both King and Queen have become familiar figures in many parts of the Kingdom and have won golden opinions wherever they have gone.

Mr. Asquith during his long Premiership did not always find King Edward as placable as he invariably found King George, *et pour cause*; in fact, the Asquithian Ministry's policy was apt to get on the nerves of the immortal Peacemaker, as did that of Lord Salisbury, notably upon one occasion, which may be appropriately recalled to Mr. Lloyd George in his days of glory. On July 11, 1902, a month less two days before the coronation, the public learnt with surprise that Lord Salisbury had tendered his resignation to the King, who had accepted it. On the following day Mr. Balfour was Prime Minister.

Why did Lord Salisbury resign ? More than one reason was assigned. His friends asserted that he had long wished to be relieved of the burden of State, and that he had remained in office only until the conclusion of peace with the Boers. "Insiders," however, contended that the resignation was the culmination of a serious difference with King Edward respecting the aims and methods of our foreign policy. The trouble came to the verge of breaking-point immediately after the death of Queen Victoria. The King's views of what should be our relations with Germany and France were opposed to those of the Prime Minister. His Majesty was bent upon fully re-establishing our former friendly relations with France, no matter if by doing so we slackened our ties with Germany. Lord Salisbury regarded this attitude of the Sovereign as trenching upon *his* territory ; but His Majesty was inflexible.

But it was a variance of opinion on a very different subject which directly led to the Premier's retirement. "The *Coronation* list of 'Honours' to be conferred must not," said King Edward, "be of the stereotyped character, but should be—in fact, *must* be—thoroughly national. Consequently, the recipients of these distinctions must include members of all Parties, and some at least of those whose claims have been unrecognised hitherto." His Majesty did not end there. He continued : "And, Lord Salisbury, there is one gentleman whom I particularly wish to see in the 'Honours' List." The King mentioned the name. Lord Salisbury replied simply and calmly : "That, Sir, is *impossible*." "I wish him to be given a *peerage*, and *he must have it!*" The Premier was inflexible. He refused to comply with his Sovereign's command. Many will admire the great statesman's firmness in opposing the King's order, for that is what it amounted to. But the gentleman in question got a baronetcy a little later. He had been knighted many years previously, and later made a K.C.V.O.

The Sovereign was still unable to leave his room after the serious operation performed upon him on June 24. Mr. Joseph Chamberlain, a prominent Minister, was the victim of a distressing cab accident on July 7. But Lord Salisbury had made up his mind to quit his post, and he quitted it. With Mr. Asquith's resignation in 1916 the Sovereign had nothing to do. It was an incident at a most critical moment in the history of the Empire; but there was no question at issue between King and Premier, as there had been in Lord Salisbury's case fourteen years previously.

King George is, in the truest sense of the words, "all things to all men." King Edward did not "like" this man and that man. He did not, for example, always see eye to eye with Mr. Balfour, but, until the last two years of his reign, good-humouredly tolerated Mr. Asquith. His august son is tolerant to all and sundry. Those who have to do with him have the pleasant consciousness that he is their friend as well as their Sovereign Lord.

THE KING'S "FIFTIETH"

On June 3, 1915, at Buckingham Palace, the members of the Royal Family tendered their congratulations to the King on his jubilee, and the

Prince of Wales and Prince Albert, who were away on active service, sent affectionate messages. Queen Alexandra, Princess Victoria, and the Princess Royal and her daughters, Princess Maud and Princess Alexander of Teck, lunched with the King and Queen. There was no public celebration of the event in 1915, 1916, or 1917.

Comparisons between the late Sovereign and the new one were inevitable in 1910. It was only in quite the later years of King Edward's reign that there came over him a change which even his strong will was powerless to conceal, or even to dissimulate; only then that occasional fits of despondency overtook him, and were never wholly shaken off.

"What manner of King shall we have in the successor of Edward VII?" was the blunt question on people's lips when the new monarch presided at the first meeting of his Privy Council. He had been known as the "Sailor Prince," like his uncle Alfred, Duke of Edinburgh, and later, until his death, Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, a title now borne by another English-born Prince, who has publicly expressed the opinion that this country has treated Germany "shamefully."

It was further remembered of George V that he had voyaged to most of the oversea parts of the Empire. This was about the measure of our knowledge of the Prince, who, by his brother's death, had become Heir-Apparent upon his father's accession to the Throne in January, 1901. But we knew that his career had been wholly dissimilar to that of King Edward during the nearly sixty years of his Princedom, when he was undergoing his apprenticeship. Of the great Continental worlds of politics, diplomacy, and economics so familiar to his father King George had not had a vestige of experience. Was it too late for him at five-and-forty to acquire a knowledge of these all-important elements of his "trade"? As was the mental, so was the physical contrast between the father and the son a striking one. The former had entered upon his gigantic task in the completest state of preparedness—trained "to an ounce," not burdened by the slightest doubt or hesitancy as to his ability to fulfil the functions of Rulership with satisfaction to his people and credit to himself.

On June 3, 1915, his jubilee, King George had reigned for just over five years. During that period he had formed himself, and the Empire had had many opportunities of seeing what manner of ruler we have in the monarch whose fourth year on the throne coincided with the beginning of that war of nations which not even the most prescient of our statesmen and diplomatists could by any possibility have anticipated. What the King accomplished in those five years as Grand Chairman of the Empire is outlined in these pages. What he had left undone may be summed up as a negligible quantity. By his various progresses through the manufacturing and agricultural districts he had made himself acquainted with the conditions of life of his people in a manner certainly not exceeded, scarcely attempted, by any of his predecessors. Those visits, in which Queen Mary figured to the delight of the people, had at least the result of stimulating that loyalty to the Throne which is sometimes apt to be dormant when opportunities of gazing upon the lineaments of the sovereign are withheld, as they were at a period of the Victorian reign, remembered by some still among us. Nothing could more efficaciously have stamped the King's individuality upon the minds of his people than his quiet, unheralded visits to the Front and his almost daily inspections of his heroic soldiers, sailors, and all others who had been and still are (1917) engaged in hospital and relief work in general.

CHAPTER II

THE QUEEN

" THE Queen is the titular and cherished head of the womanhood of England."

This was the happy phrase of Lord Rosebery when Her Majesty opened the new buildings of the Bedford College for Women in Regent's Park on July 4, 1913.

" Queen is the old word for mother," said Max Müller. And King George's consort embodies Freeman's definition of a Queen : " The highest of wives and the highest of mothers in her husband's dominions."

What the great preacher Bossuet said of the consort of Louis XIV may be appropriately applied to Queen Mary : " Il n'y a rien que d'auguste dans sa personne, il n'y a rien que de pur dans sa vie." The woman is not yet born of whom more could be said than is contained in those noble words.

With a few broad sweeps of the brush I will essay to portray Her Majesty's womanhood, restricting myself to the delineation of some of her salient characteristics. As she " wears her heart upon her sleeve," the task is the less difficult of achievement by any one who has studied her. My purpose is to treat the august lady with a latitude which I think is lacking in what has hitherto been written about her. I am not in sympathy with the stereotyped effusions of those who describe themselves as "annalists" and "memorialists." I can get no inspiration out of the lay figures which you see in artists' studios. I must take my impressions from the life or not at all.

Princess Mary Victoria, only daughter of the Duke and Duchess of Teck, was born at Kensington Palace on May 26, 1867, was christened there, and was named Victoria Mary Augusta Louisa Olga Pauline Clementine Agnes; but she was known in the family circle, and later to the public, until her marriage, as Princess May. The Archbishop of Canterbury (Dr. Longley) officiated at the christening. Among the sponsors were Queen Victoria (represented by the Duchess of Teck) and King Edward.

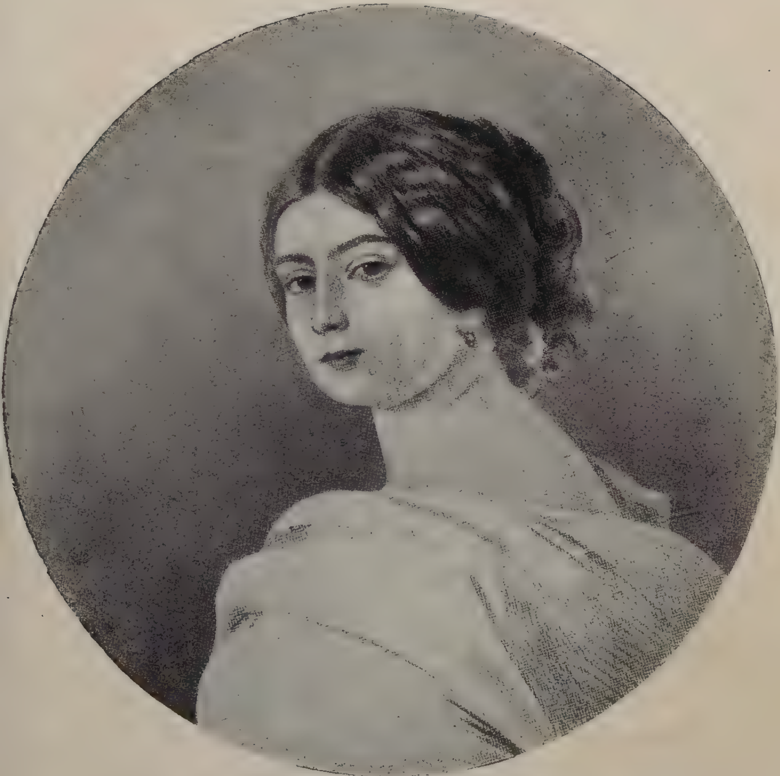
Her mother summed up the little "May" in these words: "She really is as sweet and engaging a child as you can wish to see: full of life and fun, and playful as a kitten; with the deepest blue eyes imaginable, quantities of fair hair, a tiny rosebud of a mouth, a lovely complexion (pink and white), and a most perfect figure. In a word, a model of a baby."

The Duke of Cambridge (the Queen's uncle), recorded in his Diary: "The little girl is a charming, healthy little child, with powerful lungs."

In the diary * of Her Majesty's mother, the Duchess of Teck, who was one of London's popular

---

* By Sir Clement Kinloch Cooke.



AN EARLY PORTRAIT OF THE LATE PRINCESS MARY OF CAMBRIDGE
(MOTHER OF QUEEN MARY)
From Winterhalter's picture

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

idols, there are these and other references to Queen Mary's girlhood:

"We had our tea on the lawn, with all the chicks, the nurses, and dolls. Francis joining us. Then I did some gardening until it grew late, when I hurried to the nursery.

"We hid the Easter Eggs for May in the corridor till nearly four, then into the garden, and had a short walk outside with Francis and May. Sat out writing, playing with the blessed trio (the late Prince Francis was just three months old), and having tea with May and Dolly [Prince Adolphus].

"Breakfasted in my bedroom, and looked out upon the chicks playing on the grass. Had tea with the nursery on the lawn, played with the trio, and took May and Dolly to the stable-yard to see the pups.

"Breakfasted in the corridor, chicks assisting. In the afternoon I took May in the barouche to the Kew Deer Park to witness the games got up by the Richmond Cricket Club. She behaved herself most beautifully.

"May lunched at my breakfast; afterwards our Kensington butcher arrived with a charming little goat equipage for May, the whole complete; and, as it rained, the delighted chicks drove up and down the corridor in it. . . . May was so good that she had her tea with us.

"Dear little May grows every day more of a companion, and is as clever and bright a child as possible for her age, just three and a half!

"*Sunday*. At five o'clock I had May down and read the Psalms and the Lessons to her. Afterwards I gave the children their Scripture reading.

"*Monday.* Francis and I joined the chicks at their lunch. . . . Wales's children came in the afternoon, and I went to the nursery to keep them in order.

"*Wednesday.* Heard May her dates and Franky [the late Prince Francis of Teck] his French reading before lunch, and finally went to the schoolroom to assist at a grand wedding of the dolls. Tea in the nursery, and played at geographical loto. . . .

"*Saturday.* Assisted at chick's music lesson, and then drove with May and baby to Coombe, where we got out and picked primroses. Francis met us there on horseback."

It must have struck observers—I must not say critics—that King George's consort possesses some of Queen Victoria's characteristics as displayed before old age and infirmity came upon her. As a girl she was a favourite of King Edward's mother, and might take many liberties which the Sovereign never resented. One day, ere she had been emancipated from short frocks and black stockings, she was admitted into the *salle à manger* at Windsor Castle while Queen Victoria was at lunch. The Queen was very fond of game; and whenever she found on her plate a particularly succulent leg of a pheasant, partridge, or grouse, she took it in her fingers and disposed of it. It happened so on the day in question, to the horror of Princess May, who, as the Queen raised the titbit to her mouth, exclaimed, in tones which rang through the room, "Oh! how awfully dirty to eat with your fingers!"

Under the fostering care of her mother, a practical woman, with no illusions, the Queen became thoroughly domesticated. She found a more or less agreeable occupation in darning her brothers' socks; she had her own appliances for cooking—pasteboard, rolling-pin, saucepans and stew-pans, flour-dredger, and the rest of the kitchen paraphernalia. Thus she became something approximating to a *cordon bleu.* Her rolls, cakes, fruit tarts, jam "roly-polys," and meat pies and puddings were voted "perfection." And she could turn out a good mealy potato, and equally good sprouts and "chips," and cook steaks, chops, and kidneys in a style which would have put many a professed *cuisinière* to the blush.

She was as carefully and thoroughly educated as any of the children of Queen Victoria and the Prince Consort. The Duchess of Teck gave her daughter and her sons sound religious instruction, and all were well read in the Book of Books. Even at the age of eight "May" was comparatively *bien instruit*, and her mother was able to write of the child and her brothers: "May is, I am thankful to say, outgrowing her delicacy, and has greatly improved in looks. She is quick and clever, and very musical, and all three promise to be very apt pupils. They understand German, and are getting on well with it."

The children's parents would not allow them to have overmuch pleasure or excitement. An intimate friend of the Duchess once sent "May" and her brothers three invitations during a week. Two were accepted, but the third was declined by the careful mother in these common-sense words: "A child has enough to do to learn obedience and attend to her lessons and to grow, without too many parties and late hours, which take the freshness of childhood away and the brightness and beauty from girlhood. There are too many grown-up children in the present day."

The Queen was well grounded in German and French by the time she had reached sixteen, when the family went to reside for a considerable period at Florence. The "Winter City" was for the Princess in particular a species of finishing school. There she learnt Italian, continued her lessons in German, which she now read and spoke with facility; sedulously studied art, and dipped deeply into history, for which she had a decided partiality and aptness. She is said to have taken up her course of historical reading "not merely to know the story of dynasties and wars and conquests, but in the deeper sense of constitutional progress and social development." One of her greatest friends, Lady Wolverton, wrote: "A strong desire came over her to learn the meaning of some of the deep things of life, to know what had made mankind what it is, what had made her dear country what it was, and what it behoved every Englishwoman to be and do as a worthy citizen of that country." Her historical reading embraced a study of the France, Germany, and Russia of our own days.

Even as a girl the Queen had a pronounced taste and aptitude for vocal and instrumental music. The eminent composer, the late Sir Paoli Tosti, who found a charming patroness and friend in the Queen's grandmother, the Duchess of Cambridge, trained her in singing. Almost from her earliest teens the Queen danced beautifully. Needless to say she looks upon "Tangos" and the like Terpsichorean follies with unfavouring eye.

The Queen's first formal appearance at Court was at a drawing-room held by Queen Victoria on March 23, 1886. She was at Westminster Abbey for the Jubilee service and attended the Court entertainments which made that season memorable. In the succeeding three years she accompanied her mother on public occasions, on a round of visits to their friends' country houses, and on excursions to the Continent, notably to Austria. With her mother also she witnessed a representation of the Ober-Ammergau Passion Play. An event in her life was her parents' silver wedding (1891), when several garden parties were given at White Lodge. It was in the same year, at Luton Hoo, that Princess May became engaged to the late Duke of Clarence and Avondale.

Queen Mary was a prominent figure at Queen Victoria's Court on great occasions as far back as 1888. In June of that year Princess May and her mother were present at the State ball given at Buckingham Palace in honour of the visit of the late King of Sweden, who was a *littérateur* of mark. At this entertainment the show of diamonds was remarkable, and the newly installed system of electric lighting was voted far superior to gas. The dancing in the Royal circle was not overanimated, but the Queen of to-day apparently enjoyed it. At this ball the then Princess of Wales (Queen Alexandra) wore the diamond tiara which was her principal Silver Wedding gift.

The Princess became engaged to the then Duke of York when on a visit to the Duke and Duchess of Fife at Sheen Lodge; and on May 3, 1893, came

Queen Victoria's announcement that she "gladly gave her consent to the union." The marriage took place on July 6 at the Chapel Royal, St. James's, in the presence of Queen Victoria, the parents of the bride and bridegroom, the ex-Emperor of Russia (then Tsarevitch), the King and Queen of Denmark, and Prince and Princess Henry of Prussia (brother and sister-in-law of the German Emperor). Buckingham Palace was the scene of the wedding breakfast, and the honeymoon was spent at York Cottage, Sandringham. On the wedding night London was spontaneously illuminated on an unprecedented scale. Never was there a more popular Royal marriage.

The young couple made their first London home at York House, St. James's Palace. The dates of birth of the six children are: The Prince of Wales, 1894; Prince Albert, 1895; Princess Mary, 1897; Prince Henry, 1900; Prince George, 1902; Prince John, 1905.

I am firm in the conviction that we must not compare Queen Mary either with Queen Victoria or with the august widow of Edward VII. The first was a reigning Sovereign and incomparable. The second was accorded a position which made her only second to a Queen-Regnant. That was her due for more reasons than one. The Queen of to-day is a masterful woman, who, in a brief space, has gained the nation's goodwill and affection.

She is already the People's Queen. We recall her visits to the meanest cottages in the manufacturing and mining districts in 1916, her chats with the occupants, the eagerness of all—the children in particular—to see her, even to touch her robe as she talked to the mothers in simple, unaffected words. "Why, she is just like one of ourselves; there's nothing 'starchy' about her, though she is the Queen"—so these humble folk said to each other. A hasty generalisation of Her Majesty, as viewed at ceremonies, is "very stately." Artists and poets might add, without much exaggeration, the Tennysonian prettiness that she moves

> Like Proserpine in Enna, gathering flowers.

The Queen has all the amiability, minus the expansiveness, of her mother, the "jolly Mary" of the crowd at the Botanic night and other *fêtes* which, in her time, were the principal attractions for the social middle classes. The Princess (Duchess of Teck) strolled through the "houses" in the Botanic Society's grounds, conducted by Mr. Sowerby (the principal official), and a posse of the Fellows followed at a respectful distance. And there were "presentations" to the august cousin of Queen Victoria, the lady upon whom, it was said, Prince Louis Napoleon—when an exile, after and before his escape from Ham—cast longing eyes. But at that time there was no likelihood of the daring adventurer ever becoming Emperor of the French; and so the mother of our new Queen smilingly declined the "invitation to the waltz."

For years the Queen's mother was second in popularity only to the Sovereign, and was as great a "draw" as "the Princess" who reigned and now reigns at Marlborough House. The Duke of Teck was *bon camarade*, and would take aspiring actors like the late George Grossmith to sup at the Bachelors' Club. The dark-complexioned father of

"Mary" was the handsome man of the Royal Family, but he became universally popular only by degrees; for at the outset a dislike of and an antipathy to all German Princes was still general.

While the Queen joins freely in conversation, she is not given to the lighter topics of talk, nor does she appreciate the persiflage which "went down" at Court in the last reign, in a great measure owing to its encouragement by King Edward, whose favourite anecdotist was "Billy" (William Howard) Russell, *Times* and *Telegraph* journalist and proprietor of the *Army and Navy Gazette*. Queen Victoria had a privileged jester in Mr. Alec Yorke, brother of the Lord Hardwicke of the period, the wearer of the glossiest hat in London and the shiniest and tightest boots.

The Queen is credited by a knowledgable person with a curious way of ceasing to converse. On some one being brought up to her, she will begin to talk with quite remarkable felicity, setting the other at his or her ease. Then, *on dit*, she suddenly ceases, an acute silence supervenes, and "the other" does not know whether to break the pause or to slip away. The fact is that Her Majesty talks well by dint of severe concentration; this does not always last until the end of the conversation, and once the thread is broken she grows abstracted, thinking of something else.

In all matters relating to domesticity and to charitable effort the Queen is in earnest—a trait of her consort's grandmother and also of his mother. Without being even in the remotest sense of the word a *tête-forte* like the Empress Frederick, the Queen is a great reader of solid books, native and foreign, although I imagine that Strauss and Renan do not make the same appeal to her as they made to the Kaiser's brainy mother. If she ever glances at some of the lighter class of weekly papers, she must be amused at the intimate acquaintance of their writers with Palace life. The daily journals record her doings with a fullness that leaves nothing to be desired even by the most omnivorous reader.

Not only may the Queen be credited with literary tastes; she has, and this is surprising, sufficient knowledge of technique to enable her to revise and correct "proofs" for the printer, a task in which some noted authors of my acquaintance are lamentably deficient. Canon Edgar Sheppard writes of the Queen's skill in this direction:

"Throughout the long months in which I have been engaged upon the Memoir [of the Duke of Cambridge] the Princess of Wales has taken the most kindly interest in my task and has helped me in a hundred ways. In the midst of a life full of pressing engagements Her Royal Highness has found time to read all the proofs, to correct many errors, and offer innumerable helpful suggestions. Many of the notes are the outcome of her knowledge, and without her assistance much of the Memoir that deals with the Duke's private life would have been impossible." *

Among the Queen's favourite authors are Macaulay, Froude, and Motley, whose works figure in her library. She does not disdain fiction, when it is

---

* The Rev. Edgar Sheppard, C.V.O., D.D., Subdean of His Majesty's Chapel Royal, editor of "George, Duke of Cambridge: a Memoir of his Private Life." London: Longmans, Green and Co. 1906.

not of the "advanced" school—a euphemism for "unpleasant," something "not quite suitable" for even the twentieth-century young lady of fifteen. Any novel which the Queen would pronounce to be fit for perusal by women and the young girl who is

> Standing with reluctant feet
> Where the brook and river meet

would be "passed" by the Archbishop of Canterbury, Father Vaughan, General Booth, and the Elders of every Scottish kirk.

The Queen has long had a fairly large number of friends in France, but she has had very few opportunities of meeting them. She was intimate, for example, with Mlle. de Luynes, and as far back as 1890 she and her mother spent several days with the Duchesse de Luynes at Dampierre. In honour of the visit of the English Royalties the present Duchesse Douairière d'Uzès arranged a *grande chasse.* This lady is still one of the most notable of *grandes dames* in the front rank of sportswomen. For more than thirty years her pack of hounds and her stud of horses have been the talk of France, and her "meets" recalled the brilliancy and picturesqueness of the Royal and Imperial *chasses* of the past. The Dowager Duchess, who is a sculptor and an author, derived her immense wealth from her relationship to the proprietors of the agreeable beverage known as "Clicquot." This, however, was not the brand of champagne affected by King Edward, who greatly favoured "Duminy," which he first began to drink many years before his accession. It was served to him, like other brands, from a decanter, and, of course, "society" soon followed his example.

Art is a subject which the Queen gladly discusses. One day, when in Ireland, she had been examining some pictures painted by a well-known Dublin artist, to whom she expressed her opinion of the works. He told me that he was surprised at her knowledge of art. " Few critics," he said, " could have delivered sounder opinions on the chiaroscuro, upon which she dwelt with much lucidity. I knew the Queen's aversion to desultory talking, so I said what I felt impelled to say without any awkward pauses, Her Majesty listening most good-naturedly and occasionally interjecting remarks which revealed the fact that her art-knowledge is the reverse of superficial. The whole conversation was a succession of agreeable surprises to me."

In one of my volumes devoted to the late King I have dwelt at length on the religion of the Royal Family.* I observe that the writer of a sparkling weekly article, " From a Club Window," which graces the *Liverpool Daily Post*, and is widely read for its amusing indiscretions, states (February 28, 1914) that the Queen is " a devout Churchwoman of the Broad to Low Church type." I find this definition rather difficult of solution. I had never heard of the existence of a *via media* between " Broad " and " Low " Church. The creed of King Edward, his consort, and his family was, as I have written, " a cheerful Protestantism," by which I intended to convey that they favoured, not precisely " High " Churchism (although bordering upon it), but a modified " Anglicanism." Those acquainted with the services at the Chapels Royal which are attended by the Sovereign, the Queen, and the Royal children, know that there is nothing "Broad," "Low," or "Broad to Low" about them. The services at those Chapels and at Sandringham Church are distinctly bright, and everything is done, in the language of the Prayer Book, "decently and in order." There has been no change since King Edward's death.

---

* " King Edward in his True Colours."

Has the English Court undergone a radical change, or, indeed, any change under the present *régime*? I am prompted to make this inquiry, after recently reading an article by Mr. Harold Brighouse in the *Manchester Guardian.* "It is," he says, "a strange symptom, this revival of night clubs under a Government mainly Nonconformist and a Court wholly Puritan." What basis is there for such an imputation? I think little or none. There is certainly nothing "Puritanical" (which we associate with unnatural gloom and acerbity) about the King, who is essentially genial, and, within limits, gay; or about the Queen, who delights in seeing people enjoy themselves within due bounds. I should not be so hypocritical as to write favourably of a Puritanical Court. I do not, however, wish to see a "Second Empire" Court—far from it.

It may be that the Queen has always shown less concern for the artistry of frocks and hats than, in the long ago, characterised her august mother-in-law, who, *on dit*, was instructed in the art of how to dress artistically by Mrs. Standish, of Paris, at one time almost the "double" of the consort of Edward the Great. That was in the days, never to be seen again, when Marlborough House was, as Charles Kingsley wrote of something else, "the centre, the very omphalos," of social London. Mrs. Standish was entertained by the King and Queen not so long ago, and many of her old friends visited her at "Almond's."

This little story shows the Queen in a charmingly natural light. When, in 1901, as Prince and Princess of Wales, King George and the Queen were passing through Paris to embark at Brindisi *en route* to Australia, they were met by M. Xavier Paoli at Calais Station.

"I will present you to the Prince," said the Princess, and the next moment she exclaimed:

"George, here is M. Paoli. You recollect him?"

"Of course I remember him, and, M. Paoli, I know how much my grandmother appreciated all you did for her." (Paoli, ex-"Protector of Sovereigns," who tells the story, had the surveillance of Queen Victoria whenever she was in France.)

In 1908 King Edward's son and daughter-in-law passed a week together in Paris for the first time, and on their return to England Paoli conducted them to Calais. Scarcely had the train left the Gare du Nord than the illustrious pair invited him to lunch with them, and a very merry *déjeuner* it proved to be. It was an extemporised meal, for there was no restaurant car. Folding tables were brought into the Royal saloon, a cloth was laid, and from two hampers (packed at the Hôtel Bristol) provisions were forthcoming, with two bottles of champagne. These the Prince insisted on opening himself, with the result that one of the corks flew out unexpectedly and drenched his consort's robe.

"It doesn't matter," she said laughingly; "champagne doesn't stain a dress."

Upon taking leave of the "Protector" at Calais the Princess said:

"You must come and see us when you are next in England. I want to show you my children, whom you have not seen yet."

Paoli (bold man!) reminded her that she had forgotten to send him a promised portrait of herself.

"That is true," was the reply. "Attendez," and she drew out a pocket-handkerchief and made a knot in it, saying gaily, "*Now* I shall not forget it."

In 1909, when my friend Paoli (author of "Leurs Majestés") retired from the *Sûreté Générale* (the French Scotland Yard) after forty-two years' service, Sir Arthur Bigge (Lord Stamfordham) wrote the "Protector of Sovereigns" a letter conveying the Prince and Princess's best wishes for his future happiness. And fourteen months later Paoli's host and hostess in the Paris-Calais train were King and Queen.

Those who best know and understand Queen Mary have now come to recognise her as one of those women who are girt with the cestus, the magic girdle, of Venus—women of an irresistible fascination. One of her many gifts is that of saying the right thing at the right moment. Let me illustrate her aptness in replying to a compliment.

The President of the Paris Municipality presented her, when their Majesties were guests at the Hotel de Ville, with a silver mirror bearing the Royal Crown, saying: "I hope, Madame, it will always reflect a happy face." The Queen, fully equal to the occasion and the sentiment, answered, in fluent French: "As long as I am in Paris, Monsieur le

Président, it could not reflect anything else but smiles and happiness."

A hasty generalisation of Her Majesty, as viewed at Court and other ceremonies, is "very stately," while, during these war times, her "stateliness" has given place to a delightfully simple, homely manner, which has won for her the love of the maimed and wounded and nerve-shattered heroes to whom she has played the part of the good Samaritan, and of the humble folk all over the country—from the capital to Edinburgh, Glasgow, Dundee, and Perth—who have discovered that the greatest lady in the land is also one of the simplest. How she has gladdened and heartened them! What prayers have gone up that she may be long spared to continue her noble mission!

Whenever the readers of these pages are asked: "Is Queen Mary a really good sort?" let them repeat this little story, which came to me in June, 1917, from my friend, the widow of Colonel Cochran, one of the finest examples of the British soldier I have known—an opinion which will be confirmed by any of his old friends at the Army and Navy Club, otherwise "the Rag." Mrs. Cochran wrote:

> I have been trying hard to get even 3s. 6d. a week for a poor lady whose son enlisted in 1914, and who has never been able to get anything whatever sent to her. Her sole income is 11s. a week, all of which goes to pay the rent. The only help I have been able to get for her has come from the dear, good, gracious Queen. I was in such despair about the poor soul (who is over eighty, and for whom I had vainly appealed to the Distressed Gentlefolk's and other Associations) that I wrote to Lady Katherine Coke, who was in waiting, and asked if she would put the case before Her Majesty. Two days afterwards I received a kind letter, written "by command," and enclosing a cheque for five guineas; and the following Christmas

Mrs. Warren (the poor lady in question) was overjoyed at receiving a Shetland shawl and a card on which was written "With Queen Mary's best wishes," showing that Her Majesty had not forgotten her; which is quite wonderful, considering all that the Queen has had to think about and to do since the beginning of the war.

This true story is "confirmation strong" of the view of Queen Mary expressed in most felicitous terms by the *Morning Post* three days after the death of King Edward:

> India revealed that at the present moment we must acclaim not only a King of wide and matured experience, but a Queen certain to carry on with the most earnest devotion the great traditions to which she succeeds. The visit of the then Princess of Wales to India was an innovation of which many an experienced official was admittedly afraid, and native opinion was in many important instances not more in its favour. The presence of a woman where a woman had never been before, in a land where the status of women is so different and where the ferment of Western ideas of womanhood had already produced an effect, might easily have spoilt the issues most desired from the tour; instead it marvellously deepened and enlarged their value. The ardent interest in the life of the people which the Princess showed won at once an eager response from them, and completed in a manner which India had never known its sense of gratitude to Royal favour. To the Prince's political sagacity and exploits as a sportsman the Princess added a womanly sympathy which as a regal quality only existed for India as a tradition of the Great Queen, but which has been made a living reality by its present Empress—a descendant worthy of and inheriting many of the qualities of her august predecessor Queen Victoria. And to the England which, since she landed on its shores forty-seven [now over fifty-four] years ago, has paid to Queen Alexandra the most devoted and admiring homage, the certainty that her successor shares so many of her noble and enlightened qualities, and that her influence will be exerted wholly for the welfare of her people, must come with comforting assurance at this sad hour, when in saluting the King in being we cannot forget the King that is gone.

In seven years we have come to feel that we know the Royal lady; hence, we read without surprise that "world-wide messages" of congratulation were received by Her Majesty on May 26, 1917, her birthday. These tokens of respect and esteem—and may it not be said of loyal affection?—came not only from home districts, but from India, Egypt, and various other parts of the world. Her Majesty's regiment, Queen Mary's Own 18th Hussars, were first in the field, and various other regiments with which the Queen has special association sent messages. The Lord Mayors of London, Liverpool, and Manchester, and mayors and public bodies throughout the kingdom all helped to swell the volume of telegraphic congratulations which kept Her Majesty's secretarial staff busy for several hours. Many presents were received by Her Majesty at the Palace, and among them were floral offerings, including growing wistaria and other plants.

The Lord Mayor received the following reply from the Queen to a message of congratulation sent on behalf of the citizens of London:

To the Lord Mayor of London,
Guildhall, E.C.

I desire to express to your lordship my sincere thanks for the good wishes you have conveyed to me on behalf of the citizens of London. I much appreciate the kind references you make to my efforts to promote the best interests of our Empire in this time of stress. MARY R.

I found the *Daily Chronicle's* birthday paragraph exceptionally happy:

The Queen, God bless her! The whole Empire voices one sentiment on this her jubilee day. Oversea Britons know her as they never before knew a British Consort. Formerly they sent representatives home to see their Sovereigns, but she left her home to visit them in theirs. The first British Princess to cross the line, she travelled 50,000 miles by sea and land as the wife of the Heir-Apparent, and, after the splendid solemnity of Westminster Abbey, went a second time to India to receive the proudly loyal endorsement of the East of her crowning in the West.

Her Majesty's initiation, in 1914, of "Queen Mary's Needlework Guild" will link her name enduringly to the life-struggle in which we are still engaged. It has branches all over the world. Up to June 9, 1917, the Guild had received more than 500,000 gifts, which were distributed among hospitals, the wounded, and soldiers and sailors on service. On the above-mentioned date the august founder of the Guild directed the following letter to be sent broadcast:

"The Queen desires to convey to the members of the branch of Queen Mary's Needlework Guild and to all contributors in your district her grateful thanks for the useful collection of articles which they have so kindly presented to Her Majesty on the occasion of her birthday for distribution among the troops and hospitals at the front. The Queen is interested to learn that this contribution is the result of a 'shower of gifts' organised by your workers on the lines followed by Canada last year, and Her Majesty is much touched by the assurance of loyalty and goodwill expressed by the members towards herself and their generous sympathy with the objects of her Guild. The Queen will cause these gifts to be distributed wherever they are most required, and Her Majesty feels sure that

Photo Ward & Downey

H.R.H. Prince Henry, H.R.H. Prince Edward, H.R.H, Princess Mary.
H.R.H. Prince Albert. H.R.H. Prince John, H.R.H. Prince George

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

they will be highly appreciated by our brave men."

The Queen has been from the first indefatigable in her efforts to make the Guild a triumph of distribution, and to secure this most laudable end an army of indefatigable workers came forward, with the magnificent results now recorded.

When I was writing these pages in June, 1917, this charming illustration of Queen Mary's sensitiveness reached me from a distinguished friend, who was an eye-witness of the event. The Sovereigns, then Duke and Duchess of York, visited Ireland in 1897 (August 18–September 8). In Dublin their reception on the day of their arrival was more than enthusiastic. The young Duchess was so completely overpowered by the wildness of the cheering that she could not speak. So great was her emotion that her eyes filled with tears, although she struggled bravely to keep them back. Those close enough to witness her agitation (of whom my informant was one) were almost equally touched. I think very few are aware that the Queen, although she contrives to appear outwardly calm, is nervous by nature. This temperamental characteristic is much less apparent after her more than three years' unintermittent efforts on behalf of our stout-hearted defenders on land and water and their suffering dependants at home.

During this visit of the future King and Queen to the Green Isle just twenty years ago, the present Lord Beresford's forcible plea for the establishment of a Royal residence in Ireland was being much discussed, and, as was well and truly said by a commentator of the period: "The reception of the

Duke and Duchess of York gave some colour to the views of those who believed in the efficacy of Princes in politics." Now, would not the Duke and Duchess have been ideal occupants of that long-talked-of, much-desiderated "Royal Residence in Ireland?"

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER III

THE KING "BETWEEN THE DEVIL AND THE DEEP SEA"

HIS MAJESTY'S POLITICAL AND PRESS CRITICS

> The cry of Civil War is on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of my people.—King George's Declaration, July 21, 1914.

If words have any meaning, as they sometimes have, we were on the verge of Civil War in 1914. The King was threatened with it by one Political Party and its Press if he signed the Home Rule Bill, and by the other Party and its Press if he did not sign it. How His Majesty took these threats is shown by his own words. That "the most responsible and sober-minded of my people" was not a phrase calculated to be universally acceptable was proved by the tempest of anger it evoked from the supporters of Home Rule. It had the unfortunate effect of adding fuel to the flames; and that was unnecessary.

Home Rule had been before the country for thirty years. The climax came in 1913–1914, and it is with what happened first during that period, and then in 1916–1917, that it is now proposed to deal impartially. The object is to show how, during the first of those periods, the harassed Sovereign was treated by both Parties—how he was made to stand between the Devil and the deep sea. Seldom had an English King been placed in a more difficult position by his own subjects. Could he please both Parties? It was apparently an impossibility. The only step open to him he took. He acted as a Constitutional Sovereign should, in fact must, act by taking the advice of his Ministers: *he signed the Bill.* At that moment the war of the nations broke out, and, to the credit and honour of Conservatives and Liberals, a truce was agreed upon between them until the termination of the conflict. The Empire was united as one man. We need not speculate upon what would or might have happened *but for the war.*

The extracts here given will enable the reader to realise the peril with which the nation was confronted in 1913–1914 until the eve of the war; and, as far as is practicable, the Government's proposed "Convention" (1917) will be dealt with.

The long-standing quarrel, dating from the eighties of the last century, over Home Rule resulted in an *impasse* in 1913–1914. Not only were the Constitutional powers of the Sovereign called into question, but the King's name was imported into the controversy, and His Majesty was bluntly told what he ought to do and what he ought not to do. He was informed by Conservative journals that if he signed the Home Rule Bill before a general election had pronounced upon it civil war in Ireland would assuredly be the result. Later a petition, signed by a million Conservatives, imploring His Majesty not to sign the Bill until after a general election, was presented to him. Thus he was requested to act against the advice of his Ministers.

What would have followed, had the King granted the prayer of the petitioners, was predicted by Mr. (now Lord) Harcourt, then Minister for the Colonies, in a speech delivered by him at Bradford in the autumn of 1913, but not generally reported, except by Liberal papers. His warning words were these: "Strongly though I believe the Throne to be entrenched in the affection and respect of the people, I am convinced that any extra-constitutional action would reduce it to a hopeless ruin, which no one would dare to rebuild. . . . *The Monarchy must act only on the advice of its responsible Ministers.*"

This was sound Constitutional common sense, and in striking contrast to the published assertion of Mr. Arnold White shortly afterwards (November 10, 1913): "The Bill will have to be dropped, because *otherwise we shall split the Empire into smithereens when the King signs.*"

The *Manchester Guardian* of November 15, 1913, and the *Westminster Gazette* of the 17th printed the subjoined letter from the *Irish Churchman*, a weekly paper published at Belfast, "with" (said the *Guardian*) "a very strong Carson bias." The *Guardian* headed the letter "Ulster 'Loyalists' and a Continental Monarch.—Amazing Letter." It ran as under:

> SIR,—The Unionists of Ireland need have no dread of Mr. Asquith sending over British troops to put down Ulster's opposition to Home Rule. He could not muster a sufficient number of troops to enable him to carry out his threat. The Unionists of Ulster have now over 150,000 well-trained men, and the number is being increased every week. In addition to this there is the promise of 100,000 more from England and Scotland.
>
> Nor is this all. It may not be known to the rank and file

of Unionists that *we have the offer of aid from a powerful Continental monarch*, who, if Home Rule is forced on the Protestants of Ireland, is prepared to send an army sufficient to relieve England of any further trouble in Ireland by attaching it to his dominions, believing, as he does, that if our King breaks his Coronation oath by signing the Home Rule Bill he will by so doing have forfeited his claim to rule Ireland. And, *should our King sign the Home Rule Bill, the Protestants of Ireland will welcome this Continental deliverer as their forefathers under similar circumstances did once before.* Therefore, Unionists of Ireland,

" fresh courage take,
The clouds ye so much dread
Are full of mercies and will break
In blessings on your head."

H. G.

According to the Manchester paper the initials "H. G." "covered the identity of one of the strongest ultra-Carson and Protestant controversialists in Ulster." Nothing further was heard of the letter, but on April 18, 1914, the well-informed writer of "From a Club Window" in the *Liverpool Daily Post* wrote: "I am able to state positively that last September it was common talk among the Unionists of Ulster that it would be better to be a dependency of Germany than of the Dublin Parliament. This was so notorious that Unionist ladies wrote of it as one of the future eventualities in their private letters."

The writer continued:

There is no disguising the fact that those about the Throne view with deep anxiety the way in which His Majesty's name has been bandied about in the last two months. Ever since Lord Loreburn's famous letter, the King has been unceasing in his efforts for compromise, but, like so many honest mediators, he has himself suffered from the effect of his own self-sacrificing assiduity. The King's name is too freely used, not so much in the House or in the Press, as in that terrible undercurrent known as "people say." I once told the tale how in the seventies King Edward bet Sir Charles Dilke he (the then Prince of Wales) would never succeed to the throne. Two Members of Parliament, on the Government side, have in the last fortnight gravely given it as their opinion that the present Prince of Wales will never reign, because England is rushing towards Republicanism. So preposterous is the idea that it had best be ventilated, for anarchy works underground, and the great loyalty of the masses ought to learn that it may have to respond audibly in our fervent national prayer, "God save the King." The influence of those most at Court is often prejudiced and one-sided; but the King has nobly tried to see what is right and to do it.

I must here point out that the two Liberal M.P.'s who "expressed their opinion that the Prince of Wales will never reign" were only, perhaps unconsciously, echoing the words of the late Sovereign as originally reported in my volume, "More About King Edward."

When, on March 4, 1914, nearly three weeks before the Army crisis was in full blast, the *Daily News* published a "leader" entitled "The King and the Country," it was fairly certain that the honoured name of Gladstone would be "dragged in" to support the view that the Sovereign must on no account "take sides" when any great Constitutional question is being discussed by his subjects, but must remain mute. Many remembered, although thirty-eight years had elapsed, the article, "Kin Beyond the Sea," contributed to the *North American Review* (1878) by Mr. Gladstone, who was just then in great request by editors of the weightier magazines. To Mr. J. G. Swift MacNeill, M.P., K.C., was due the credit of resuscitating Mr. Gladstone's essay, and noting that it was "written for the purpose of explaining and expounding the working of British political institutions to the American public." Mr. Gladstone first touched upon "Constitutional Kingship," a subject upon which much ink flowed between March 23 and 31, 1914. That the eminent statesman, scholar, and essayist was in "form" when he sat down to gratify the desire of the American magazine for an article from his brilliant pen will be seen by the appended extracts :

> From mere labour power may be severed, but not from labour joined with responsibility. This capital and vital consequence flows out of the principle that the political action of the monarch shall everywhere be incident and conditional upon the concurrence of constitutional advisers. It is impossible to reconcile any, even the smallest, abatement of this doctrine with the perfect absolute immunity of the Sovereign from consequences. There can in England be no disloyalty more gross as to its effects than the superstition which affects to assign to the Sovereign a separate or, so far as separate, a transcendental sphere of political action. Anonymous servility has indeed in these last days hinted such a doctrine (*Quarterly Review*, April, 1878, Art. I), but it is no more practicable to make it thrive in England than to rear the jungles of Bengal on Salisbury Plain.

The subject of the "dismissal of Ministers by the Sovereign" was next dealt with in this passage :

> There is, indeed, one great and critical act the responsibility for which falls momentarily or provisionally on the Sovereign ; it is the dismissal of an existing Ministry and the appointment of a new one. This act is usually performed with the aid drawn from authentic manifestations of public opinion, mostly such as are obtained through the votes or conduct of the House of Commons. Since the reign of George III there has been but one change of Ministry in which the Monarch acted without the support of these indications. It was when William IV in 1834 dismissed the Government of Lord Melbourne, which

was known to be supported, though often in lukewarm fashion, by a majority of the existing House of Commons. But the Royal responsibility was, according to the doctrine of our Constitution, completely taken over *ex post facto* by Sir Robert Peel as the person who consented, on the call of the King, to take Lord Melbourne's office.

Thus, though the act was rash and hard to justify, the doctrine of personal immunity was in no way endangered. And here we may notice that in theory an absolute personal immunity implies a corresponding limitation of power greater than is always found in practice. It can be hardly said that the King's initiative left to Sir R. Peel a freedom perfectly unimpaired. And most certainly it was a very real exercise of personal power. The power did not suffice for its end, which was to overset Liberal predominance, but it very nearly sufficed. Unconditionally entitled to dismiss the Ministers, the Sovereign can, of course, choose his own opportunity. *He may defy the Parliament if he can count upon the people. William IV., in the year* 1834, *had neither Parliament nor people with him.* His act was within the limits of the Constitution, for it was covered by the responsibility of the acceding Ministry. But it reduced the Liberal majority from a number considerably beyond three hundred to about thirty, and it constituted an exceptional but very real and large action on the politics of the country by the direct will of the King. I speak of the immediate effects. Its eventual result may have been different, for it converted a large disjointed mass into a smaller but organised and sufficient force, which held the fortress of power for the six years 1835–1841. On this view it may be said that if the Royal intervention anticipated and averted decay from natural causes, then, with all its immediate success, it defeated its own real aim.

Finally Mr. Gladstone deprecated a revival of the influence of the Crown which characterised the reign of George III:

It would be an evil and perilous day for the Monarchy were any prospective possessor of the Crown to assume or claim for himself final or preponderating or even independent power in any one department of the State. The ideas and practice of the time of George III, whose will in certain matters limited the action of Ministers, cannot be revived otherwise than by what would be on their part nothing less than a base compliance and shameful subserviency dangerous to the public weal and in the highest degree disloyal to the dynasty. Because in every free State for every public act some one must be responsible, and the question is: Who shall it be? The British Constitution answers: The Minister and the Minister alone. That he may be responsible, all action must be fully shared by him. Sole action in the Sovereign would become undefended, unprotected action; the armour of irresponsibility would not cover the whole body against sword or spear; *a head would project beyond the awning, and invite a sunstroke.*

Mr. Swift MacNeill, a well-known member of the Irish Bar, had previously (January 20, 1914) directed attention to this subject in the *Manchester Guardian*, in a letter entitled "Ego et Rex Meus.—Mr. James Campbell's idea of a Conservative Sovereign."* He wrote:

In friendly rivalry with Lord Halsbury, a former Lord Chancellor and keeper of the King's conscience, who urged that the veto of the Crown should be exercised to defeat the Home Rule Bill, Mr. James Campbell, K.C., M.P., another Privy Councillor and an ex-Attorney General for Ireland, told his audience at a meeting on Friday last that the King would not be exceeding his constitutional rights if he told his responsible Ministers that they were seeking his assent to a measure (the Home Rule Bill) which if passed would inevitably lead to civil war, and that their honest and honourable course was to appeal to the people, and that his constitutional duty as a Sovereign was to advise them to do so. A suggestion of this kind, which is an insult, albeit unconscious, to the Throne, may find its condemnation in the words of Mr. Gladstone.

"An ill day for the Crown if——":

Not content with wrecking peace in advance, these madmen [the Conservatives, *bien entendu*] are trying to drag the Crown into their desperate gamble. They are calling on the King to dismiss his Ministers and to grant the Tory demand for a dissolution. They are circulating rumours with regard to the words alleged to have been used by His Majesty to the Prime Minister. They are suggesting that King George is disposed to listen to the doctrines laid down by Mr. Gibson Bowles in his *Candid Quarterly* and to the hysterical adjurations of Mr. Leo Maxse. But His Majesty is a Constitutional monarch, and he is not likely to depart from the strait and narrow path marked out for him by King Edward and Queen Victoria. If a modern monarch were to behave as foolishly as George III or William IV, he would very quickly discover that democracy in this country has come to stay. It would be an ill day for the Crown if a monarch were to attempt to govern without or contrary to the advice of his Ministers.*

---

* When in May–June, 1915, the Coalition Ministry was formed, it was reported that Mr. Campbell might possibly succeed Lord Haldane as Lord Chancellor. He is now Lord Chief Justice of Ireland.

As an organ of the democracy *Reynolds's Newspaper* is entitled to be heard on matters in which the principal figure is that of King George. "Gracchus," in *Reynolds's* of March 21, 1914, wrote thus pungently on "What the use of the King's Veto would lead to":

The reckless folly of the Tory party, in its disgraceful attempt to drag the Throne into the vortex of party politics, marks one further stage in the epidemic of madness from which the present Opposition is suffering. A generation ago Conservatism prided itself on its claim to be the party of law and order, and the party which upheld the Constitution. To-day it throws constitutionalism to the winds and *preaches open rebellion against the King's forces.* As an electioneering move Toryism to-day is seeking to annex the Throne to its side as a party asset. *Openly and shamelessly, Tory newspapers and politicians are urging King George to veto the passing of the Home Rule Bill.* In so doing they are not only proving themselves ignorant of what the British Constitution really is, but *inviting the monarch to play with fire.* It is rather remarkable, by the way, the amount of ignorance on this subject displayed by the Opposition. They are, apparently, under a complete delusion as to the rôle filled by the monarch in our constitutional system of government. It is true that the King's assent to an Act of Parliament is necessary in order to give it validity. It is also true that a King, in withholding his assent, can in effect veto any legislation. What the Opposition forget, however, is that this *right of veto has not been exercised for more than two hundred years,* and is now contrary to the customary or conventional usages of the Constitution.

---

* *Star*, March 4, 1914.

Let the reader pause for one moment over the indescribable folly of such an act as this on the part of the Crown. The monarchical system in this country is associated in the popular mind with the ornamental aspect of our national life, far removed from the turmoil and hurly-burly of elections, the clash and din of political strife. *Whatever influence is exerted by the monarch, either in domestic or foreign politics, takes place behind the scenes.* Time was when, as the figurehead of the nation, he openly settled everything; but, as the centuries rolled by and the British people achieved their liberties, the power of the Throne was limited so gradually that nearly all true power passed from the monarch to his Ministers. . . . In the twentieth century the power of shaping the government of the country lies in the hands of workmen, Trade-Unionists or non-Unionists. *What would be the effect produced on the mind of the working classes if King George took part in a General Election as a sort of second lieutenant to Bonar Law or Lord Milner?* No workman in the country is under any delusion on this score. What will he think should the Monarch do any act which would even appear to place him on the side of the working man's political enemies? The cold exclusiveness which has kept the Throne beyond the reach of party recriminations will give place to heated partisanship, and the Throne will become the football of party politics. The desperation of the Tory party at its continued exclusion from office has plunged it into more than one form of madness. *And, of all forms of madness, the idea of dragging down the King from the serene neutrality of his Throne into the dusty arena of party politics is assuredly the maddest.*

But the arguments of "Gracchus" are part of the stock-in-trade of all democratic writers. Let us see how effectually they may be answered. In November, 1913, at an anti-Home Rule meeting held at Chelsea Town Hall, Lord Halsbury spoke on the right of the King to veto Home Rule :

> The House of Lords (said the eminent ex-Lord Chancellor) had by 300 votes to 62 rejected the Home Rule Bill. Did any one seriously urge that the opinions of 300 peers should be disregarded altogether ? Once upon a time if a certain thing had not been done the Bill would have been thrown out and the present difficulty would never have arisen, but all this had been altered. Was His Majesty to be allowed to exercise his judgment ? Was he to be entitled to say, "No, this is against the interests of my country, a country which I am called upon to govern, and I must do my duty and reject it" ? Oh dear no. The right of the King to do so could not be denied in theory, but the commentary was, "The King's prerogative has been abolished for 200 or 300 years, and therefore you cannot think of doing it."
>
> It was argued that to talk of the King's veto was all nonsense. He did not assent to that proposition, but urged that it was part of the British Constitution, and that the King, Lords, and Commons must combine in their assent to legislation. The Lords had been abolished so far as they could be abolished, although he trusted that the abolition was not irrevocable. And now an effort was being made to abolish the right of the King.
>
> Must the King do what he was bid ? If so it was not much of a King ! It was for His Majesty alone to decide whether the thing proposed to be done was good or the reverse for his country.

It was a brilliant exposition of the Sovereign's right to exercise his judgment, and the more remarkable because at the date indicated Lord Halsbury was in his eighty-ninth year ! His vigorous opposition to the Veto Bill in the House of Lords will always be remembered by the Conservatives. It was natural that the Liberal papers should have headed their reports of Lord Halsbury's speech, "Dragging in the King," if only as a reply to the taunts of the Conservative journals on that point.

Early in March, 1914, a correspondent, signing himself "Liberal and Constitutionalist," recalled in the *Daily News* these "glaring instances of this attempt to associate the King's name with the Unionist policy":

"The country's young King . . . might shortly see the day when Unionists would make his position safe."—(Lord de Ramsey, Sept. 1911.)

"He did not believe that even those Ministers would dare to advise their Sovereign to give his Royal assent to those two Bills."—(Lord St. Aldwyn at Bibury, Aug. 1912.)

"Suppose the Home Rule Bill . . . was waiting for the Sovereign to decide whether or not it would become law. Whatever he did half of his people would think he had failed in his duty."—(Mr. Bonar Law at Edinburgh, Jan. 1913.)

"The King would doubtless have a word to say on this question."—(Mr. J. H. M. Campbell, M.P., at Carlton House Terrace, May 1913.)

"Under such a King . . . nothing will ever make me believe that we can be flung aside."—(Sir Edward Carson at Omagh, Aug. 1913.)

"May we not hope that . . . the Sovereign will exercise his undoubted right and dissolve Parliament?"—(Sir George Cave, M.P., Sept. 1913.)

"If the King should determine in the interests of his people to take a course of which his Ministers disapprove, he must either convert his Ministers to his point of view, or, before taking action, must find other Ministers who agree with him."—(Sir William Anson, Sept. 1913.)

"Was he [the King] or was he not to have a judgment—to be enabled to say, 'No, this is against the interests of my country which I am called upon to govern; and I must do my duty; I reject it'?"—(Lord Halsbury at Chelsea, Nov. 1913.)

"If the King is advised, not honestly but for mere political advantage . . . then I say a very grave situation would arise."—(Sir Edward Carson at Truro, Dec. 1913.)

"By our loyalty and devotion to the Empire we have a claim on the King and Crown."—(Mr. J. H. M. Campbell, M.P., at York, Jan. 1914.)

"If the King was not entitled to do so [to refer the question to the people] he became for the time a mere cipher and the puppet of any Ministry that could command a majority in the House of Commons."—(Mr. Donald Macmaster, K.C., at Egham, Feb. 1914.)

The *Standard* wrote (March 25, 1914):

> The Labour-Socialists are engineering a rabid attack on the King for his action in regard to the army officers. Daring references to the position of the Throne were made in the House of Commons yesterday, and were greeted with loud cheers from the Labour benches. There can be little doubt that a serious and most wicked manœuvre was in contemplation, and that it was frustrated only by Royal influence. Such is the position brought about by the reckless methods of the Government. It can hardly be to their satisfaction that they have, in effect, forced the Monarch from the position of detachment which the King ordinarily occupies. The nation at large, when it fully grasps what has happened, will undoubtedly feel gratitude to the King for taking steps in time to avert the crowning calamity of civil war.

The *Spectator* treated a speech by Mr. John Ward thus lucidly (March 28, 1914):

> Before we deal chronologically with the course of the crisis in Parliament we must say a word in regard to the deliberate attack upon the King made by Mr. Ward in the House of Commons—an attack which, we regret to say, was welcomed by the bulk of the Liberal Party with rapturous applause. We cannot find words sufficiently strong to condemn the falsehood and the unfairness of Mr. Ward's suggestion. We say this, not because we think that the King should be exempt from criticism if he has acted unwisely, or because we hold courtier-like views as to criticising Royalty, or, again, because we think that the King can do no wrong in fact as well as in theory. In our crowned republic the King must be censured where he deserves censure. Since, however, we exact from him, and, as we think, rightly exact, the neutrality of a Judge or of the Chairman of a Committee with hostile elements on it, and since the etiquette of the Constitution, and here again quite rightly, does not allow him to defend himself any more than can a Judge, it is essential that he should not be exposed

to reckless and unjust charges, and held up to odium for doing things which he has not done. As the Prime Minister, in language which, we are glad to say, was both adequate and sincere, has pointed out, the King in the present crisis has behaved in the true spirit of the Constitution.

What the King has, in fact, done has been as far as possible to prevent his subjects from flying at each other's throats. He has played the game of neither party, but has done what no doubt the hotheads on both sides consider hateful—has acted the part of " neutrality personified " which is allotted him by the Constitution—the part of moderator and of pacificator. He has used his influence in the cause of peace and of keeping the ship of State steady. If that is a crime, then, and only then, is the King guilty of misdoing. Yet here is Mr. Ward, who professes to be a leader of men, trying, on no evidence except some backstairs gossip, and because he thinks it a fine and popular thing and a proof of his own sterling independence, to throw odium on the King, and to insinuate that his influence has been improperly used. As a rule, the Labour men have shown themselves not only honest but thoroughly well bred in debate. Let us trust that Mr. Ward's example will not prove contagious. Fortunately for Mr. Ward, no one challenged him to say on what grounds he had made his suggestion of Royal interference against the Liberals. If any one had done so, he would have had none to produce, and he must have stood shamed in the opinion of all decent people as the retailer of false and malicious gossip on a matter of vital import.*

---

* Mr. John Ward was known at the time in question as the "Navvies' Member." Shortly after the outbreak of the war he enlisted, and in 1915 was made a colonel. In the first week of January, 1916, upon the publication of Lord Derby's report, Mr. Asquith introduced the Bill providing for compulsory service. Sir John Simon, who on the previous day had resigned the Home Secretaryship, delivered a bitter, but somewhat irrelevant, attack on the Bill, but Colonel Ward made what was generally admitted to be an exceptionally able speech in its defence, and received the enthusiastic praise of the Conservative Press. The *Spectator* (January 8, 1916), although it referred to other speeches, was silent about Colonel Ward's speech. When, in February, 1917, the troopship *Tyndareus*, carrying the officers and men of the Middlesex Regiment, was

While the London Liberal papers assailed the Sovereign on July 22, 1914, several provincial Liberal organs took a very different view of his action. One of these was the *Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*, which said on the above date:

> His Majesty is graciously anxious to justify the unusual step he has taken in intervening in the Home Rule controversy. If any justification beyond the exceptional circumstances that have arisen were necessary, one need not seek it farther than in the tone and substance of the beautiful speech with which the King opened the Conference, and which ought to touch the heart and conscience of every loyal subject of His Majesty. While the speech conveys a most delightful impression of personal character and individuality, there is nothing whatever in it that can possibly conflict with the Constitutional position and action of the Sovereign.

And on July 23 the same journal wrote:

> The readiness with which Liberal journals concluded that the contrary was the case can only be attributed to a severe attack of Constitutional "nerves," which causes them at this moment of crisis to see in every new development an attack upon democratic prerogatives. Mr. Asquith's clear and definite statement on the subject in the House of Commons yesterday has in it also a ring of sincerity and it places the commentators, who heard in the King's speech only the personal voice of the King, in a rather foolish position. More than one influential journal, rashly assuming that the Liberal Prime Minister had no responsibility for the speech, was led by that assumption even into impugning the King's political impartiality, which

---

mined off the South African coast, Colonel Ward addressed the troops in a nobly conceived speech, concluding with these words: "Obey orders, and we may be able to save you all. But if we cannot, then let us finish like English gentlemen." Perfect order was maintained and not a life was lost; and the hitherto (not altogether unjustly) maligned Colonel was eulogised by the entire Press. It may be fairly said of journalists, as Sheridan said of the critics: "When they do agree, their unanimity is wonderful."

> was a deplorable and dangerous breach of good taste. Even the *Westminster Gazette* was misled into declaring with confidence that, "judging from internal evidence," the speech "cannot have received the imprimatur of the Government." This is an illustration of the folly of assuming what nobody had any right to assume. . . .

The Radical *Manchester Evening News*, greatly to its credit, expressed these moderate opinions :

> The King's reference to the most responsible and sober-minded must necessarily include men of all parties. And it is perfectly true that men of all parties have had the cry of civil war on their lips, some supporting it and others denouncing it. Another reason for the belief that this is the correct interpretation of the phrase is the assumption, almost amounting to a certainty, that whether or no the King's speech was drafted by his Ministers, or approved by his Ministers before he delivered it, its publication was authorised by Ministers. We do not think the King would have sent it to the Press without their approval, for, according to the dictum laid down by Mr. Gladstone and never repudiated, Ministers must, while they are Ministers, bear the undivided responsibility of all that is done in the Crown's name. That being the case no one can for a minute suppose that the Government would authorise the issue by the King of a speech in which he wished to convey the opinion that the political opponents of the Government are the most responsible and sober-minded of his people. And so we may put on one side the suggestion that the King has shown preference for one political party over the other.

Other provincial Liberal journals wrote in a similar strain.

Alone among the London exponents of Liberalism the *Star* was thus pleasantly contrite for its blustering remarks of the previous day (July 22) :

> We frankly acknowledge that these [Mr. Asquith's] decisive statements completely dispose of any reasonable doubts as to the true meaning of the ambiguous phrase in the King's speech. . . . The fact that the Prime Minister takes "the whole responsibility" for this double-edged sentence compels

his supporters to place the most favourable interpretation upon it. We cannot now honestly sustain our view of yesterday that His Majesty meant that the cry of civil war was "on the lips of the Unionist Party, and that, in the opinion of the King, the Unionist Party are 'the most responsible' and 'the most sober-minded' of his people." Nor can we justify our argument that by using the phrase His Majesty appeared to associate himself with the Opposition and with the Ulster Covenanters. All that is disposed of by Mr. Asquith's acceptance of full responsibility for the speech. We are anxious to make this quite clear, for it is only right to be scrupulously fair to the King, who has "throughout followed the strictest Constitutional practice." And in this connection Liberals ought to remember that the Parliament Act was in the last resort carried to the Statute-book only by means of the fidelity of His Majesty to the Constitution. It was his resolve to act on the advice of his Ministers with regard to the creation of peers which finally overbore the resistance of the House of Lords to the Parliament Act. The criticism which the Liberal Press has directed against the phrase ought therefore to be re-addressed to the Prime Minister.

The ordinarily mild *Westminster Gazette* waxed as disagreeable on July 23 as on the previous day, to the general amusement:

Great as is our admiration for the Prime Minister, we do not hold him to be infallible, and we have not changed our opinion. We said yesterday, and we may repeat to-day, that "for *either the Government or the Sovereign* to speak of 'the cry of civil war as being on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of my people' is to strike a very new note in public affairs." It is, we continue to think, a very undesirable note. Sir Edward Carson may talk of "civil war" and politicians may repeat the phrase; we know its purpose and meaning when used by them. But for the Sovereign no war can be levied by private persons in the United Kingdom which is not war against him, and it is not well that he should say that the cry is on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of his people.*

---

* Mr. Asquith explicitly stated in the House of Commons that he, the Prime Minister, *took the whole responsibility for the words uttered by the King.*

The *British Weekly*, the leading Dissenting organ, remarked: "The Prime Minister's statement was received with very noticeable frigidity. The fact is that Liberals generally were exasperated when they found that the news had been first given to and first published by two great newspapers which have steadily encouraged the resistance of Ulster. We should not have laid any stress on an affray among the rival dailies. We see force in the reply of the *Times* to criticisms." Referring to the assertion of the *Daily News* that the King meant to refuse to assent to the Home Rule Bill unless an Amending Bill accompanied it, the *British Weekly* said: "We decline to believe that this action on the part of the King is possible. He has done no wrong, but rather rendered what may be a great service by calling the Conference."

At Malmesbury, on July 25, 1914, Mr. (now Sir) F. E. Smith,* denouncing the attacks of the Radical Press on the Sovereign, said:

> The King, upon the advice of his Ministers and using the great position of the Crown for one of the noblest purposes for which the Royal prerogative could be used, to preserve peace among his subjects, invited the Conference at Buckingham Palace to see if, even in this last moment of despair, some solution might not be reached which would afford some promise, however shadowy, of peace. What has the result been? Every Radical newspaper in London has combined to pour the most scandalous obloquy upon the Sovereign (cries of "Shame"), who has done nothing except that he adopted and acted upon the advice of the Leader of the Liberal Party. In all the vile history of the Liberal Press in London no more scandalous phase has ever been known than the campaign which they carried on against the King in the last few days.
>
> We know some explanation a little out of the ordinary is

---

* Attorney-General, 1916.

required before an organized campaign of this kind is undertaken by the whole of the Liberal Press in London—I say in London because to its eternal honour the Liberal Press of the provinces has declined to join in this dirty game. Respectable newspapers in the provinces like the *Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury* have dissociated themselves from the campaign carried on by the *Daily News* and the *Daily Chronicle.* We understand perfectly well why this campaign has been carried on. It is because the Party, discredited, bankrupt of policy, staggering under the final moments of its ruin, is not satisfied with the cry which perished with infamy against the Army, but is now determined if, amid our staggering institutions, they can get one ounce of party advantage, not even to stay their hands against the vile attacks upon the Throne, of which Mr. Keir Hardie is the real leader. Our answer to that challenge is plain. We would have met them in their charge against the Army if a general election had been fought on that issue, and we say, further, that if it is to be the deliberate object of Liberal policy at the next general election by vile attacks to drag the Crown into party controversy *the Unionist Party will rally on the steps of the Throne* (cheers) and raise the voice of sanity on behalf of the last of our English institutions which they have menaced and attacked. Alluding to the crisis in Europe, he said it might not inconceivably lead to a general convulsion. In the past England had been able to speak, sometimes with a decisive voice, in the cause of peace, but in the face of internal faction how could it be expected that the voice of England could now be used in the cause of peace?

It should be noted retrospectively that, prior to the meeting of Parliament on February 10, 1914, there had been much speculation as to the manner in which the Home Rule Bill would be referred to in the King's Speech. The words here italicised in the following extract from that admirably judicious document were generally understood to have been suggested by His Majesty: "In a matter in which the hopes and the fears of so many of my subjects are keenly concerned, and which, unless handled now with foresight, judgment, and in the spirit of mutual concession, threatens grave future difficulties, *it is my most earnest wish* that the goodwill and co-operation of men of all parties and creeds may heal dissension and lay the foundations of a lasting settlement." Noble words, those.

The Peers proposed an amendment to the Home Rule Bill, urging that it would be disastrous to proceed further with the measure until it had been submitted to the judgment of the country. The customary message from the King to the House of Lords (February 23) thanking them for their address in reply to the Speech from the Throne contained this important and unusual addition: "I have received with great satisfaction your loyal and dutiful expression of your thanks for the Speech with which I opened the present session of Parliament. *I take note of your representations with regard to the Government of Ireland Bill*" [the short title of the Home Rule measure].

What followed? Less than a month later the country heard with amazement that the Government had responded to the King's "most earnest wish" that "men of all parties and creeds" would co-operate to "heal dissension" by throwing into the centre of Irish Protestantism horse, foot, and artillery, and sending into Irish waters warships wherewith to crush the Ulster Volunteers should they display any signs of "rebellion." And next came the tale that "some one had blundered!"

Among the numerous "documents" sent to the Home Secretary for presentation to His Majesty (May, 1914) was a petition to the King from the Irish Unionist Alliance. Lord Barrymore, chairman of the Alliance, signed the petition, and among the members of the association at the time of its presentation to the King were the Duke of Devonshire, Lord Meath, Lord Rathdonnell, Lord Inchiquin, Lord Clonbrock, Lord Kenmare, Lord Mayo, Lord Rosse, Lord Harlech, Lord Massy, Lord Longford, Lord Arran, Lord Oranmore and Browne, Lord Crofton, Lord Dunalley, Lord Castlemaine, Lord Courtown, Lord Wicklow, Sir Roger Casement, Sir Maurice Dockrell, and Mr. F. Elkington Ball. The terms of this well-conceived petition to the Sovereign were as under:

> We, the undersigned, on behalf of a vast body of Irishmen of all creeds and classes, your Majesty's devoted subjects, in the Provinces of Leinster, Munster, and Connaught, crave leave humbly to approach the Throne and to represent to your Most Gracious Majesty that widespread and well-grounded alarm prevails among your Majesty's loyal subjects in Ireland owing to *the imminent danger of the outbreak of civil war, with all its attendant horrors, should the present Government of Ireland Bill be passed into law without being submitted to the electorate of the United Kingdom.*
>
> Your petitioners have been deeply moved by the words in the gracious Speech from the Throne in which your Majesty expressed your most earnest wish that the goodwill and cooperation of men of all parties and creeds might heal dissension and lay the foundation of a lasting settlement in Ireland. Your petitioners most humbly represent to your Majesty that the idea of severance from the existing Constitution is abhorrent not only to the people of Ulster but to the great numbers in the southern provinces for whom we speak, and we are convinced that the present Bill, if forced upon us, can never prove the foundation of such a settlement as your Majesty ardently desires, but that, on the contrary, it will produce a rankling sense of injustice which will create bitter animosity and entail grave difficulties for the Empire in the future.
>
> Your petitioners, speaking with intimate knowledge of their country, have the gravest reason to apprehend that on the outbreak of civil war the lives and property of many of your

Majesty's subjects dwelling in isolated portions of Ireland will be exposed to the greatest danger. Your petitioners, therefore, in this time of peril and deep anxiety, most humbly pray that such steps may be taken as your Majesty in your wisdom may deem right to ensure that this Bill, which, if enacted, will inevitably result in ruinous consequences to the nation, may be submitted to the judgment of your people.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER IV

THE INTENDED COERCION OF ULSTER

25,000 *Troops and a Naval Force!*

The King had not been on the Throne four years when he was confronted by his Government's intention to wage war with his Protestant subjects in Ireland!

Providentially, this grim project was abandoned, or four months later the strength of the small Expeditionary Force which we sent to France would have been necessarily reduced by one-third or one-fourth. The Government's plan of campaign against our own flesh and blood was, according to the Ulster Council, of which Sir Edward Carson was the most prominent member, as follows:

> The Third Cavalry Brigade was to seize the line of the Boyne.
>
> The Fifth Division was to move forward and hold the line of the Boyne.
>
> The Sixth Division from the South of Ireland was to occupy the posts at Dublin and the Curragh vacated by the Fifth Division.
>
> A force 10,000 strong was to be brought from Lichfield and Aldershot, bringing the total strength participating in the operations to 25,000 men.
>
> The naval force was to co-operate by a process of blockade.
>
> The first object of the preparations was to blockade Ulster by land and sea.

It was alleged that Sir Arthur Paget made statements to the above effect to his officers in

Dublin. There was a general expectation that the Ulster Volunteers would resist any attempt of the police to seize their arms and to take possession of the headquarters of the Ulster Unionist organisation.

The Government, placed in a grave predicament by all these preparations for cowing the Protestants by force of arms, made evasions and contradictions, while the public regarded it as certain that the Civil War would have its beginning in the North of Ireland and be succeeded by fratricidal strife in England. The Press of both Parties was equally bellicose, nor was this surprising.

In the House of Lords the then Lord Chancellor (Lord Haldane) declared, however, on March 23: "*No orders were issued, no orders will be issued, and no orders are likely to be issued, for the coercion of Ulster.*" The Conservatives were incredulous. The resignations of Sir John French, Sir Spencer Ewart, and Colonel Seely (Minister for War) startled the public; but there were no regrets for the Colonel, whom Mr. Asquith himself replaced.

DIARY OF EVENTS IN MARCH, 1914

Saturday, March 14

The Cabinet decides to adopt precautionary measures in Ulster, consisting of the sending of infantry detachments to guard military stores.

Mr. Churchill, speaking at Bradford, says: "If Ulster thinks things can only be adjusted by revolution, let us go forward to put these grave matters to the proof."

Monday, March 16

Mr. Asquith in the House of Commons refuses to give further information of his plan for the exclusion of Ulster counties until the principle of the scheme has been accepted by the Unionists. The general impression now gains strength that there is little hope of a settlement by consent.

Wednesday, March 18

General Sir A. Paget, Commander-in-Chief in Ireland, receives instructions from Colonel Seely at the War Office and returns to Dublin.

Thursday, March 19

Vote of censure debate in the House of Commons marked by departure of Sir Edward Carson, who declares that his place is now in Ulster.

Belfast reports state that the action of the military authorities in strengthening the guard at the different military barracks and store depots throughout Ulster is exciting much comment. Two reasons are assigned for this step, one extreme nervousness regarding the future action of the Ulster Volunteers, and the other that it foreshadows an attempt to suppress the Volunteers.

Sir A. Paget summons Brigadier-General Gough, commanding the Third Cavalry Brigade, and gives him ten minutes to decide whether to serve against Ulster or resign. The brigadier instantly resigns and is ordered to put the question to his officers.

Sir A. Paget sees other commanding officers, tells them that "active operations" are proposed, and gives them War Office instructions by which officers with homes in Ulster may "disappear," while other officers who object to serve in Ulster must resign and be dismissed.

Telegram sent from the Admiralty to the vice-admiral commanding the Third Battle Squadron ordering the squadron to Lamlash, where, according to a statement made in the House of Commons by Mr. Churchill on March 25, the battle squadron with attendant vessels " would be in proximity to the coasts of Ireland in case of serious disorders occurring."

Friday, March 20

War Office receives telegrams from Sir A. Paget reporting wholesale resignations of cavalry officers. This is the result of Brigadier-General Gough putting the question to them as ordered.

The brigadier and other commanding officers ordered to come to London.

All military movements that are ordered are carried out. These movements are described as purely of a " precautionary " character.

Telegram sent from the Admiralty to the Commander-in-Chief, Home Fleets, ordering two divisions of the Fourth Flotilla to join the squadron at Lamlash.

Conferences between Cabinet Ministers in London.

Saturday, March 21

Brigadier-General Gough arrives at the War Office.

More conferences between Cabinet Ministers at the War Office and 10 Downing Street.

The King receives Colonel Seely, Sir John French, and Lord Roberts.

Sir A. Paget holds secret meeting of officers at the Curragh.

Admiralty decides that the movement of battleships to Lamlash should be delayed till after Easter since the precautionary movements of troops to the various depots in Ulster had been carried out without opposition.

Mr. Lloyd George, speaking at Huddersfield, says: "I am here on behalf of the British Government to say this: That the Government will confront this defiance of popular liberties with the most resolute and unwavering determination, whatever the hazard may be."

Sunday, March 22

Colonel Seely, at the War Office practically all day, receives visits from the colonels of the cavalry regiments whose officers resigned and Sir John French; and also holds conference with Mr. Churchill and the Army Council.

The King receives Mr. Asquith, Colonel Seely, and Sir John French.

Monday, March 23

Sir A. Paget arrives from Ireland and visits the War Office.

Brigadier-General Gough receives the "guarantee" signed by Colonel Seely, Sir John French (Chief of the Imperial General Staff), and Sir J. S. Ewart (Sir John French's colleague) that he will not be required to serve against Ulster and that all his officers will be reinstated "without loss of prestige."

The King receives Sir A. Paget, Colonel Seely, Sir

John French, and the Archbishop of Canterbury during the day at Buckingham Palace.

Mr. Asquith announces, through the *Times*, that no hostile action against Ulster is intended; the troop movements are "merely precautionary." Despite the Admiralty orders mentioned above Mr. Asquith states that the so-called naval movements simply consisted of the use of two small cruisers to convey a detachment of troops to Carrickfergus.

Mr. Bonar Law in the House of Commons reads a statement, in which Sir Arthur Paget is alleged to have said that "active operations were to be begun against Ulster, and that he expected the country to be in a blaze by Saturday."

Mr. Asquith announces that the officers' resignations had been due to a misunderstanding of what General Sir Arthur Paget said to them, and that he had no authority to say it.

Tuesday, March 24

Acrimonious debate in the House of Commons during which Mr. John Ward asks: "Are the people to make the laws without interference from either the King or the Army?" Liberals take this up as a rallying cry.

Wednesday, March 25

Colonel Seely's White Paper published and later in the day debated in Parliament. He confesses he added the two paragraphs which constituted the "guarantee" without the authority of the Cabinet, and announces that he has offered his resignation.

Mr. Asquith refuses Colonel Seely's resignation and repudiates the "guarantee."

Lord Morley in the House of Lords states that "the Government has decided that the two paragraphs are to be considered as of no effect."

Mr. Asquith states that the King has always acted as a Constitutional Monarch should do.

Mr. Churchill, after explaining the movements of the Third Battle Squadron, is asked whether this action was not taken to provoke the people of Ulster to bloodshed, and replies: "I repudiate that hellish insinuation."

Thursday, March 26

Nine generals, representing all the commands in England, in conference at the War Office with Sir John French and Sir J. S. Ewart.

Sir John French and Sir J. S. Ewart tender their resignations.

The King receives Mr. Asquith and Sir John French.

Friday, March 27

Cabinet's unsuccessful attempts to induce Sir John French and Sir J. S. Ewart to withdraw their resignations.

Mr. Asquith, in the House of Commons, reads new Army order relating to discipline.

Saturday, March 28

Sir Edward Carson returns to London.

Monday, March 30

Stormy debates in both Houses.

Mr. Asquith announced the definitive resignations of Sir John French, Sir J. S. Ewart, and Colonel Seely, and added that he himself would fulfil the duties of War Minister hitherto performed by Colonel Seely.

As a result of a conference between the Cabinet, Sir John French, and Sir J. S. Ewart the following new Army Order was drawn up and, prior to its issue, read in the House of Commons on March 27, 1914:

DISCIPLINE

1. No officer or soldier should in future be questioned by his superior officer as to the attitude he will adopt or as to his action in the event of his being required to obey orders dependent on future or hypothetical contingencies.

2. An officer or soldier is forbidden in future to ask for assurances as to orders which he may be required to obey.

3. In particular it is the duty of every officer and soldier to obey all lawful commands given to them through the proper channel, either for the safeguarding of public property, or the support of the civil power in the ordinary execution of its duty, or for the protection of the lives and property of the inhabitants in the case of disturbance of the peace.

By command of the Army Council.

R. H. Brade.

War Office, *March* 27, 1914.

The opinion in military circles was that the new order was superfluous.

Sir Arthur Paget was subjected to not a little criticism concerning his alleged conversations in March, 1914, with certain officers mostly stationed at the Curragh on the Government's contemplated coup.

On March 20 (says the *Annual Register*, p. 56) Sir A. Paget arrived in Dublin and conferred first with General Gough, commanding the Third Cavalry Brigade, who apparently refused to serve against Ulster, preferring to be dismissed the service; next, with the other generals. . . . It appears to have been intimated to the officers that the orders were in accordance with the wishes of the King. It seemed that Sir A. Paget

> might unintentionally have misinterpreted the intentions of the Government. However, he telegraphed to the War Office that evening that the Brigadier and fifty-seven officers, Third Cavalry Brigade (out of a total of seventy), preferred to accept dismissal if ordered north; and General Gough sent him a minute saying that, while these officers were prepared to maintain order and preserve property, they had rather be dismissed than initiate active military operations against Ulster.

The King did not exaggerate when he uttered those fateful words: "To-day the cry of civil war is on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of my people." And here I must commit an indiscretion.

Those words had been "on the lips of" the Prime Minister and other members of the Government. His Majesty's Ministers had, as in duty bound, informed him of their intention to take forcible possession of the whole province of Ulster. They had been desirous of securing the services of one in whose ability to generally superintend the contemplated coup they had the fullest confidence. But would he accept the mission? That remained to be seen. "Ask him to come and talk it over with us without an hour's delay." One important detail still remained to carry out; but no member of the Government ever dreamt that any difficulty would arise in that particular direction—the conveyance of the invading force by rail to Belfast and other parts of Ulster.

I need not say that without the aid of the railway companies—the two principal ones in particular—there could be no invasion, no "occupation" of the so-called rebellious province of Ulster. But if Ministers were quite certain of one thing more than another it was that the railways would heartily co-operate with them in their object. One morning, however—I could give the date and the hour were it necessary to do so—a bomb-shell exploded "somewhere in Whitehall." A telegram from Dublin, being decoded, read: "*Railways refuse to convey troops.*" The Premier's face blanched. Those five words, unknown to all but their sender, their decoder, and the Prime Minister until he chose to communicate them to his colleagues and the King, spelt Revolution indeed. The Premier had momentarily collapsed, but he recovered his *sang-froid* upon being assured that the message could not possibly be founded on fact. And a few minutes later—in less than half an hour—in response to a "most urgent" telegram of inquiry the cheering news was received at Whitehall that the first message was wholly untrue.

The statements here made I know to be accurate. In the *Annual Register* for 1914 (p. 56), I find these words on the general subject:

> On March 14 it was determined to protect certain military stores in Ireland from possible raids by Ulster Volunteers. General Sir Arthur Paget, commanding in Ireland, was ordered to take the necessary steps. Cavalry and horse artillery were to support the infantry, and, *as the Great Northern Railway of Ireland was expected to refuse to convey the troops*, preparations were made to send them by sea, and one company was actually sent by sea to Carrickfergus; *but the railway authorities accepted the troops.*

"WHAT DID THE KING SAY TO THE OFFICERS?"

"Sir Arthur Paget said the King wished us to go."

"Unwarrantable use of His Majesty's name."

What view, if any, had the King expressed to those officers and others whom he had seen at Buckingham Palace before his departure for Cheshire? There had been a continuous *va-et-vient* between the War Office, Downing Street, and the Palace. His Majesty could not have remained silent at these interviews, so fraught with momentous consequences. What were the Sovereign's desires?

"The wish of the King" was recorded in the *Times* (March 27, 1914) by its Parliamentary Correspondent, who wrote:

> I am assured on good authority that a majority of the infantry officers in Ireland only agreed to go to Ulster on being informed that this was in accordance with the King's wish, and in loyalty to His Majesty and the Army. They had expressed their willingness to be dismissed the Service before this statement was communicated to them.

"There is documentary evidence," said the *Times*, "which amply confirms this statement. In a letter from Ireland, which we have before us, an officer states that on Saturday morning [March 21] he and his fellow-officers were sent for and informed by the commanding officer that they had 'to make up their minds at once whether they were prepared to fight against Ulster or not,' that they would be 'dismissed the Army or tried by court-martial' if they said they would not fight, and that they had two hours to make up their minds.

"In the evening a large number of officers from the regiments in Dublin assembled by request. The writer of the letter is unable to say how many of these officers had definitely said they would not fight, but he knows that they included ten of his own regiment and about the same number of another regiment. They were addressed by an officer of high rank, who expressed himself as 'bitterly opposed to the whole business.' The writer of the letter says he used the King's name very freely, saying that 'he had it personally from Sir A. Paget that the King wished us to go.'

"He then said [the letter continues] 'he believed us to be on the brink of a tremendous catastrophe, that the very existence of the Monarchy was threatened and that nothing stood between the country and ruin except the Army.'"

The impression made by the publication of those few lines was deep and widespread—widespread because the *Times*, at its then recently reduced price of a penny, was now enjoying a huge circulation. In February the sale of the paper (then twopence) was counted by tens of thousands—in March by hundreds of thousands. The orders for the first number of the penny *Times* were said to have reached 750,000! How valuable an asset for the Unionists and Monarchists! *

But there was more to come from the same journal concerning the important point just alluded to. The public read in its columns on the following day (March 28):

> The letters which continue to reach us confirm the fact, which we recorded yesterday, that the King's name was "used very freely" in the catechism put to the officers in the Irish Command last week. It seems clear that considerable effect was produced by the statement, made in particular to the infantry regiments, that it was His Majesty's personal desire

---

* Since the period referred to the *Times* has raised its price to twopence, the *Morning Post* to the same figure, and the *Daily Mail* to a penny.

that, of the two alternatives put to them by the Government, they should fight against Ulster rather than resign.

These statements, we gather, are now being investigated, and it is apparently admitted already by certain generals that they did in all innocence make this quite unwarrantable use of His Majesty's name—their explanation being that it was their custom to regard and speak of the King as head of the Army, and to use his name in conveying the instructions of the War Office.

It is hardly necessary to point out that the impression left in this case was just as mischievous and misleading as the contrary impression, which is being freely created by certain speakers and newspapers—namely, that the King's influence has been exerted in the crisis against the wishes of his Ministers. *The simple truth is that in this, as in all other matters, the King has played a strictly Constitutional part, and that in the fatuous and deplorable dealings of the Government with the Army he has played no part whatever.**

On this same engrossing topic—the Right of the King—Admiral Sir Algernon de Horsey, writing to a meeting at Cowes, said:

I belong to no party, as I hold party politics are injurious, if not fatal, to good legislation, and to have now brought the nation to a dangerous crisis, from which I am unable to see any escape except the legitimate one—namely, the veto of the King, until the people have been consulted. Party politicians have of late years *shamefully tried to filch the right of the Sovereign*, but it is both the right and the duty of the King to consult his people on such an extraordinary occasion as one involving the breaking up of the United Kingdom.

His Majesty could not have missed reading what Mr. Redmond had said on March 17—that "force" would be employed against Ulster. That was plain enough. The Sovereign also knew, later, what Sir Charles Ferguson had told the infantry—that

---

* These words were not italicised in the *Times*.

"the Ulsterites would have to shed first blood." And he had further been informed—certainly to his intense chagrin—that his name had been used to induce reluctant officers to yield.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER V

THE KING FALSELY ACCUSED OF "INTERVENTION"

An M.P.'s "Vile Attack upon His Majesty."

FROM Friday, March 20, 1914, until May an unparalleled state of frenzy dominated the United Kingdom. On March 26, the first and very incomplete White Paper, containing the text of the official documents, was published and produced a staggering effect. The public learnt also that Colonel Seely (Secretary for War) had tendered his resignation, which the Premier at first declined to accept, but ultimately received; and his apologia, made on the previous day in the House of Commons, appeared in the papers.

The journals of that date contained statements by the Prime Minister and Colonel Seely showing that the allegations, insinuations, and innuendoes as to the King's "intervention" were baseless.

Colonel Seely said in the House of Commons (March 25):

> I must ask the indulgence of the House in order to give it an account of my personal movements and actions which led up to the position I am now obliged to take. After seeing General Gough I went to the Cabinet. I told them what I have now told the House, and I added that, as I had not had time to draw up any statement of what I had said, I would

ask the Adjutant-General to make a rough draft for me to consider. At one o'clock I had arranged to see His Majesty at Buckingham Palace to report to him how matters stood, and may I say here that any suggestion which has been made outside—none has been made in this House—that His Majesty took any initiative of any kind in this matter is absolutely without foundation. (General cheers.) A situation of grave peril to the Army had undoubtedly arisen, and I reported at frequent intervals to His Majesty, who is head of the Army, how matters stood, but I wish emphatically to repeat the statement that I have made. (Renewed cheers.)

Mr. Wedgwood: What is initiative?

Colonel Seely: I do not wish there to be any misapprehension. In the broadest sense *His Majesty took no initiative of any kind.* (Cheers.)

Mr. Wedgwood: What is initiative?

Colonel Seely: I shall have nothing more to say. (Loud Opposition cheers.) I returned from the audience which His Majesty was pleased to grant me to the Cabinet, which was then broken up.

The Prime Minister said:

There is one preliminary observation which I should like to make before I deal with the substance of the speech of the right hon. gentleman, and that is to associate myself with what was said by Colonel Seely in regard to what I think are *the most unfair, inconsiderate, and improper attempts to bring the name of the King into this matter.* They are not made upon one side only. They proceed, I regret to say, in different senses from different quarters. I am entitled as chief responsible Minister of the Crown to say, and I say it with the fullest conviction and assurance, that from first to last in regard to all these matters His Majesty has observed every rule that comports with the dignity of the position of a constitutional Sovereign. (Cheers.) However strenuous, however exciting our debates may be, I hope we shall continue in all quarters to recognise that the Crown in a constitutional country is beyond and above the range of party controversy. (Cheers.)

The Radical journals had unanimously "gone for" the King, insinuating, some directly asserting, that His Majesty had sided with the officers who had refused to lead their men against the Ulster "rebels." But, as we have seen, Mr. Asquith and Colonel Seely stamped out the accusation. The *Daily News*, in a leading article published on the same day (March 25), said: "The country has a right to be told, and demands to be told, *the part played during these last days by the King*."

The Parliamentary Correspondent of the same paper wrote (March 25): "There is 'a new issue,' which dwarfs Home Rule and the Ulster trouble, the issue of Privilege against Democracy; on the one side the Tories and the officers of the Army, on the other the People. *On which side is the King?* The question was bluntly thrust before the Commons yesterday by Labour."

That is accurate. The "blunt thruster" was Mr. (now Colonel) John Ward, a Labour Member, sitting as a Liberal for Stoke—a man of exceptional talent and a speaker of the first quality. He joined in the debate. In the course of his speech, "raising his clenched fist," and looking at the Speaker, he said: "What we demand, Mr. Speaker, is *the right to make laws absolutely without interference either from King or Army*."

These words were followed by a wild outburst of cheering, lasting, according to the *Daily Chronicle* (which gave a vivid account of the scene), three minutes, "without any protest from the Conservatives." Later in the day Mr. Ward was congratulated at the National Liberal Club, and was given three cheers "*for saying what we all think*." But Mr. Ward's words were malapropos, as was proved by the Premier and Colonel Seely. He was doubtless perfectly sincere, and, were King George ever in peril, would join us all in going to his succour. The *Star* recorded the interesting fact that this notable Radical, as a working navvy, helped to dig the Manchester Ship Canal, for which my friend, Mr. Marshall Stevens, raised many millions of capital. [Colonel Ward's spirited defence of the Compulsion Bill in January, 1916, is noted elsewhere.]

All the papers had more or less to say about this " Liberal-Labour " M.P. The *Daily Telegraph*, heading its comments " Cheers against the King," said :

> Mr. Ward not only brought in the King ; he made a direct attack upon him. " We have now to decide," he declared, " whether the people's representatives are to make the laws of the country without interference from King or Army." There was no mistaking the meaning of that pointed association of King and Army and the mocking shouts of " Buckingham Palace." The suggestion plainly was that the Sovereign had exercised pressure upon the Government to induce them to yield to the demands of the officers. But the scene which followed was astounding considering the professions of loyalty which the demonstrators are in the habit of making. A great outburst of cheering from Nationalists and Ministerialists filled the Chamber, renewed again and again, redoubled and again redoubled, Radicals vying with Nationalists in the length and volume of their cheers. It was a cheer which will be remembered, like the fatal cheer of the Irish at the news of a British defeat. As Lord Robert Cecil truly said afterwards, the Radicals are always willing and eager to " down with " any institution which obstructs for the moment their path.*

From the *Star*, March 26, 1914 :

> The Prime Minister shattered the military dictatorship into fragments. He made it absolutely clear that there is going to be no Boulangerism in the British Empire, and that the Civil

---

* See foot-notes concerning Colonel Ward, *ante.*

Power will brook neither dictation nor the semblance of dictation from any military officer, be he high or low. He made it known to all concerned, *from the King on his throne to the humblest subaltern, that Parliament rules these realms*, and that any person, humble or august, who tampers with the supreme authority of Parliament as the representative of the people *will be remorselessly broken and beaten.* That is the principle for which the Liberal Party and the Labour Party must be prepared to fight, and to fight in the last resort, if necessary, with arms. Let there be no mistake about it. We are confronted with the gravest menace to liberty that has arisen since the Stuarts. The Tory Party have brought in the veto of the Army to sustain the crippled veto of the Lords. The people have now to face and destroy this new peril. And let us say quite plainly that, in spite of the Prime Minister's generous defence of His Majesty, there is grave reason to believe that during the past few days there have been influences at work which should not have been at work. We cannot overlook the fact that the fatal paragraphs were added immediately after Colonel Seely had left Buckingham Palace. Nor can we overlook the significance of the visits paid by Lord Roberts * to the King. Lord Roberts is one of the chief promoters of the British Covenant. He has also in the House of Lords incited the Army to mutiny against the Government in certain eventualities. We say that he is not a fit and proper person to be received at Buckingham Palace. It is no use mincing words. In this grave business nothing and nobody, high or low, must be considered except the sacred and inviolable principle that, in the words of the Prime Minister, the "considered will, judgment, and authority of the representatives of the people shall prevail."

"A word to the Working Man":

The envenomed politicians who have attempted to drag the King's name into the present controversy had their answer from Mr. Asquith last night [March 25, 1914]. He alluded with some warmth to "the most unfair, inconsiderate, and improper attempt to bring the name of the King into this discussion," and added his solemn pledge that "from first to last with regard to all these matters His Majesty has observed every rule that comports with the dignity of a Constitutional Sovereign."

---

* Field-Marshal Lord Roberts died after a very brief illness when visiting the British Headquarters in France in 1914.

The great need of Radicals and Labourists at the moment is a new election cry, and they have chosen not only "Down with the Army," but "Down with the King." At the National Liberal Club three cheers were given for Mr. John Ward, who had attacked the King in the House of Commons, "for saying what we all think."

What these Radical M.P.'s "all think" is, according to Mr. Asquith, absolutely and utterly untrue and has no foundation in fact.

The tyrant of the hour is not the King; it is not the Army; it is the Government which has attempted by a dastardly plot to bring about civil war in these islands rather than endanger its tenure of office by an appeal to the people! *

The whole affair was a tale of blunders and miscarriage, "and," said the *New Statesman* (March 28, 1914), "not the least unfortunate part of it has been the inevitable introduction of the name of the King." Why this was "inevitable" was not explained. Many agreed that it was easily avoidable. It had no good result; on the contrary, it was productive of a vast amount of unpleasantness to His Majesty, for, as I have indicated, it converted the Royal Figure into a football, and raised a number of false issues. But, as Mr. Webb, who is responsible for all that appears in the influential journal referred to, said: "It is no use ignoring the feature of the crisis; its importance is too great for it to be disposed of merely by tactful silence." This was the more welcome because it came from a paper reputed to be sympathetic to the doctrines of Socialism.

I lay stress upon what follows, but I think Mr.

---

* *Evening News*, March 26, 1914.

Webb was not quite accurate in what he said, *inter alia*, as to political intrigue having been carried nearer to the Throne of late than for many years. On this point we want evidence, not opinions. Mr. Webb proceeded in his "Tale of Miscarriage":

> Mr. Asquith and Colonel Seely assured the House with all possible emphasis that the King had not taken the initiative at any point in the discussion and had acted in accordance with the strictest conception of his Constitutional position; and we have no right to refuse to accept their statements. . . . The fact remains that, however correct the conduct of the King may actually have been, the shouts of "Buckingham Palace" which rang in the House on Tuesday [March 24, 1914] were significant of a profound and genuine uneasiness which had been aroused throughout the country, owing mainly to the open attempts of certain Conservative politicians to enlist the Crown in the Unionist cause. [I did not see a tittle of evidence to justify this accusation.] Every one knows that during the past few months political intrigue has been carried nearer to the Throne than at any previous time in the memory of living politicians. [The answer to this is that it is a sweeping assertion without a jot of evidence to support it.] The last thing that we desire to see in this country is an active and overt Republican movement, absorbing as it would for perhaps a generation the far from unlimited supplies of political energy that are available for any purpose of democratic reconstruction. But it would need only the creation of a little more suspicion to bring such a movement into existence upon, we fancy, an unexpectedly large scale. The very worst service that upholders of the Monarchy can render their Sovereign is to convey an impression that his sympathies are engaged on the side of Conservatism. There is a saying attributed to King Nicholas of Montenegro that a King should be a Liberal, his subjects Conservatives. It is a very neat summary of the essential conditions of dynastic stability.

In July, 1914, writing in the *Labour Leader*, the late Mr. Hardie made what was accurately described in the Conservative, and a section of the

Liberal, Press as a "*vile attack upon King George.*" He wrote:

> The King has been invited or has invited himself to intervene in the Home Rule imbroglio. The most serious Constitutional crisis since the days of the Stuarts has thus been precipitated. The House of Commons has three times passed the Home Rule Bill by substantial majorities. Thrice the Lords have rejected it. Meanwhile the Ulster "Loyalists" have been arming to resist the measure becoming law. That is to say, they are in armed rebellion against the State and the King's authority. And now the King casts in his lot with the reactionary peers and the rebellious Ulsterites. He joins his influence with the forces which are working against and seeking to destroy the House of Commons and our Constitutional forms of Parliamentary Government.
>
> Needless to say, he and his servile upholders, Liberal and Unionist, in the Press and in Parliament, will seek to conceal this naked truth from the public gaze. But the point is not open to dispute. The Liberal party did not ask for his interference, whatever the Cabinet may have done. The Irish party had no need for his services, and Mr. Redmond and Mr. Dillon only consented to attend the conference because the King "commanded" their presence. The Labour party resents his interference. These three sections of the Parliament have stood loyally together in getting Home Rule through; the Tories alone have objected, and, therefore, the King, in interfering, can have no other object than to assist his friends the Tories.
>
> The hypocritical assurance which is being spread abroad that the House of Commons will have the last word is a mere blind. If an agreement be reached it will come to us with the combined weight and authority of the King, the Tory party, the House of Lords, and the Liberal Cabinet behind it. Under such circumstances the House of Commons will be paralysed. I have never for a moment doubted that part of any settlement come to will be an immediate dissolution, and we begin to see why the Royal crowd have been visiting Merthyr and many other industrial centres during the past two or three years. They desired to popularise themselves with the mob so that they might rivet the chains of their iron rule more firmly upon them.
>
> King George is not a statesman. He is not the pleasure-loving scapegrace which his father was before him, but, like

his father, he is destitute of even ordinary ability. Born in the ranks of the working class his most likely fate would have been that of a street-corner loafer. And this is the man who is being made a tool of by the reactionary classes to break the power of Democracy and weaken and finally destroy the power of Parliament. But Democracy will accept the challenge. The rights our fathers won by sacrifice shall be maintained.

Mr. Keir Hardie's opinions of Kingship are familiar to the readers of my volumes "King Edward in his True Colours" and "More About King Edward." During the crisis in 1914 Mr. Hardie made no new pronouncement on this point, but his attitude towards the Monarchy is shown by these extracts from a speech made by him at Sunderland in 1910, shortly after the death of Edward VII:

> I hope it is not true that the King is intervening in the Budget dispute. So long as the King remains outside of party politics he does no harm and *can be tolerated.* The moment the Throne begins to interfere in politics, it is not only the coronet of the peer that will then go into the melting-pot, but *the crown will go along with it.* In the interests, therefore, of the maintenance of the Constitution, the Peers, I believe, will not attempt seriously to meddle with the Budget.

During the first part of the meeting a number of people in opposition to the speaker left in a body after Mr. Hardie's reference to the King.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER VI

THE MANTLE OF EDWARD VII INHERITED BY GEORGE V

THE CONFERENCE : THE KING'S MEMORABLE WORDS

This explanation of events is doubtless accurate. It was headed "The King as Peacemaker: Ulster Deadlock: His Majesty's Quest for a Solution."

> The most important factor now operating for peace in the Irish situation is the influence of His Majesty the King. The mantle of the Peacemaker that rested on the shoulders of the late King Edward VII has descended on his illustrious son, who has been for some time seeking to bring about an Irish peace.
>
> It has previously been pointed out that the informal negotiations that were in progress between political leaders on this subject originated when they were present at Balmoral, and since that time His Majesty has made himself thoroughly acquainted with the views of both Liberals and Unionists with regard to Ireland and the separate treatment of Ulster. *Independent of all parties and impartial, as His Majesty always is, he has been largely an intermediary in the negotiations.* He has exerted, and doubtless will continue to exert, a highly beneficent personal influence with the object of bringing both parties together on some common ground to seek a settlement by consent.
>
> Were the Home Rule Bill to be forced on so that by the operation of the Parliament Act it passed over the heads of the House of Lords and awaited the Royal signature, a situation of extreme delicacy would be created owing to the violent opposition of Ulster. Irish Unionists hope that His Majesty would refuse to sign. But the established constitutional

Photo "Daily Mail"

THE KING AND QUEEN, THE UNITED STATES AMBASSADOR (DR. PAGE), ADMIRAL SIMS (UNITED STATES NAVY)
(AT THE AMERICAN OFFICERS' CLUB, MAYFAIR)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

practice is that *the monarch shall sign all measures which are properly brought before him*, and there is no doubt that he would be placed in a position of embarrassment, from which the statesmanship of his Ministers must seek to save him.*

By the figurative phrase, "the mantle of the Peacemaker," was presumably meant the genius, the wisdom, and the sagacity of our late Sovereign, of whom His present Majesty is, in most respects, a replica. As with the father, so with the son. At the immediate outset of their reigns neither was generally thought likely to go down to posterity as a really "great" King. Yet Edward VII had not been on the Throne a week ere it was made manifest that we had as our Ruler one whose capacity for governance was not exceeded by that of any King, Emperor, or President in the world's history. And, as the *Mail* so truly said, "his mantle has descended on his illustrious son." In his reign of (in 1917) a little more than seven years, he has given so many proofs of his sagacity that we have long since come to regard him as a second Edward VII, the maximum of praise which the language will admit of.

We cannot, we must not, forget that King Edward, within two years of his untimely and tragic death, was confronted by a Constitutional difficulty as grave as that which has been faced by his successor. And we must remember that, with all his genius, all his power of persuasion, all his profound knowledge of men, and all his insight into the devious ways of diplomacy, Edward VII did not, to his chagrin, succeed in reconciling the two Great Parties in the State. He exhausted himself in the effort, and that his failure was, in a measure, a factor in his last illness is proved by the delicate, yet firm, reference to it by the eminent medical men who drew up the report describing the stages of his malady.

---

* *Daily Mail*, October 18, 1913.

Whether King George, as a Constitutional Sovereign, should have been placed in such an unenviable position as that in which he found himself in 1913–1914 may be an arguable point; but it is well to remember that William IV was faced by a memorable difficulty "when the proceedings of the Trade Unions caused some anxiety at Windsor Castle." Mr. Henry Dunckley, in his admirable memoir of Lord Melbourne (in the series of "Queen Victoria's Prime Ministers," edited by Mr. Stuart J. Reid, issued by Sampson Low), records the facts, which are *à propos* in these days, as they give us a clear idea of the procedure in these vital matters.

King William, who favoured the use of italics, wrote to Lord Melbourne through his private secretary pointing out that "the Unions avowed their intention of appealing to brute force and may . . . do much harm to the commerce and industry of the country. . . . The King cannot lose sight of the importance of endeavouring to impose some check to the *progress* of this evil, and to adopt some *preventive* measures, instead of trusting to its *decay* after the edifice shall have been injured, and he is anxious that the question should be brought under the consideration of his Government at the approaching meeting of the Cabinet."

In a country governed more or less by precedents King George probably wrote long ago to the head of his Ministry in a somewhat similar strain, with the laudable object of seeking to bring about an Irish peace. For that purpose His Majesty, less than a fortnight before the outbreak of that dire conflict which, in August, 1917, entered upon its fourth year, summoned the leaders of both Parties to a Conference. The first meeting was thus officially recorded :

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *July* 21, 1914.

The King, accompanied by the Prince of Wales, and attended by the Gentlemen in Waiting, disembarked from on board His Majesty's Yacht *Victoria and Albert* (Commodore Douglas R. L. Nicholson, A.D.C., R.N.) last evening after dinner and proceeded to London.

His Majesty travelled by special train on the London, Brighton and South Coast Railway from Portsmouth Dockyard to Victoria Station, and drove to Buckingham Palace.

The Right Hon. J. W. Lowther, M.P. (Speaker of the House of Commons), had an audience of the King this morning.

His Majesty then received the Members of the Conference as follows : The Right Hon. H. H. Asquith, M.P., the Marquis of Lansdowne, the Right Hon. J. W. Lowther, M.P., the Right Hon. Sir Edward Carson, M.P., the Right Hon. D. Lloyd George, M.P., the Right Hon. A. Bonar Law, M.P., Mr. John Redmond, M.P., Mr. John Dillon, M.P., and Captain J. Craig, M.P.

The King opened the proceedings with a Speech in the following terms :

" GENTLEMEN,—It is with feelings of satisfaction and hopefulness that I receive you here to-day, and I thank you for the manner in which you have responded to my summons. It is also a matter for congratulation that the Speaker has consented to preside over your meetings.

"My intervention at this moment may be regarded as a new departure. But the exceptional circumstances under which you are brought together justify my action.

"For months we have watched with deep misgivings the course of events in Ireland. The trend has been surely and steadily towards an appeal to force, and *to-day the cry of Civil War is on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of my people.*

"We have in the past endeavoured to act as a civilising example to the World, and to me it is unthinkable, as it must be to you, that we should be brought to the brink of fratricidal strife upon issues apparently so capable of adjustment as those you are now asked to consider, if handled in a spirit of generous compromise.

"My apprehension in contemplating such a dire calamity is intensified by my feelings of attachment to Ireland and of sympathy with her people, who have always welcomed me with warm-hearted affection.

"Gentlemen, you represent in one form or another the vast majority of my subjects at home. You also have a deep interest in my Dominions oversea, who are scarcely less concerned in a prompt and friendly settlement of this question.

"I regard you, then, in this matter as trustees for the honour and peace of all.

"Your responsibilities are indeed great. The time is short. You will, I know, employ it to the fullest advantage and be patient, earnest, and conciliatory, in view of the magnitude of the interests at stake. I pray that God in His infinite wisdom may guide your deliberations so that they may result in the joy of peace and honourable settlement."

His Majesty then withdrew, having invited the Speaker to preside at that and at all subsequent meetings.

The members of the Conference failed to agree after four meetings.

The *Star* (July 20, 1914) recalled the fact that "the summoning of a Conference by the King was first suggested in the *Daily News* on June 3 in an article entitled 'What Can We Do?' by Mr. James Douglas." In that article, reprinted by the *Star*, Mr. Douglas asked who was the man to convene an Irish Conference? "I say that the man is His Majesty King George. He alone is outside our quarrels and above our conflicts; his office forbids him to interfere. But it does not forbid him to act as mediator and moderator." "It is evident," added the *Star*, "that the proposal thus adumbrated in the *Daily News* has been adopted." To say the least, the talented journalist fired a lucky shot.

RADICAL SUGGESTIONS OF THE KING'S INTERFERENCE

Some of the Government's supporters hoped in March, 1914, that the Prime Minister would advise a dissolution before presenting the Home Rule Bill and the two other principal measures to the King for signature. There was reason, and there was common sense, in this hope, if only because the adoption of that course, as the *Scotsman* indicated, would have "greatly relieved the position of the Sovereign, and prevented his name from being dragged into the political arena." But the writer overlooked the fact that for months the name of His Majesty had been tossed about by the Press of both Parties like a football. However, the intention of the journal was good; and it went on to say: "In spite of the Prime Minister's warm rebuke, the suggestions as to interference by the King are still current in Radical quarters."

This appeared on Saturday, March 28, 1914, and in the Sunday papers references to the King were more abundant than ever; nor had disparaging allusions to His Majesty ceased in many other journals.

"These suggestions are absolutely baseless. The King, as head of the Army, has naturally followed recent events with close and anxious interest, but the country has the testimony of Mr. Asquith, who alone can know, that His Majesty has never varied by a hair's breadth from the duties of a Constitutional Monarch."

Despite Mr. Asquith's statement Mr. G. N. Barnes, M.P., asserted at Leeds (July 18) that "courtly influences and aristocratic forces had been at work to defeat the ideal of the Irish people." Similar utterances continued to be made until Saturday, August 1, when the country realised that we were on the verge of war.

THE KING SIGNS THE HOME RULE BILL

In 1912 and again in 1913 the Home Rule Bill was rejected by the House of Lords. In 1914 it formed the staple subject of debate. The Conference summoned by the King in July had, as we have seen, failed to remove the deadlock. In all human probability the United Kingdom would be plunged into fratricidal strife with all its horrors. From this national tragedy, possibly from disruption of the Empire, we were saved by the political Parties entering upon a truce as a consequence first of the threatenings, then of the actual outbreak, of war in August. A few weeks later (September 18, 1914) *the Home Rule Bill was signed by the King.* It was the first measure to be passed under the procedure of the Parliament Act, after "nearly thirty years of incessant strife."

The Sovereign had done his duty by assenting to the Bill, undeterred by the violent and shocking threats of the "antis," all, sad to say, Conservatives!

"THE KING HAS BEEN GREATLY ANNOYED BY A SECTION OF THE PRESS"

The *Standard* [July 22, 1914] has been requested by a high authority in close touch with Court circles to state that His Majesty the King has been greatly annoyed by the action of a certain section of the Press in endeavouring to bring his name into the controversy over the proposals for Home Rule for Ireland, especially in regard to the statement that His Majesty has expressed an intention to refuse his consent to the measure, if sent to him for consent, unless accompanied by an Amending Bill.

His Majesty has been most careful not to give any expression to his views on the Home Rule question, and in his conversations with his Ministers and his close personal friends has never made any disclosure of his own opinion, and any statement in any way to the contrary is premature and without foundation in fact.

It is particularly unwarrantable that any statement should have been made which assumes or even suggests that His Majesty has stated that he would withhold consent to the Home Rule Bill under any conditions whatever.

It is a fact that the King is extremely anxious concerning present happenings in, and the future of, Ireland. His action in commanding a conference between the leaders of the Government and the Opposition and the representatives of the Irish Nationalist party and of Ulster was not for the purpose of deferring discussion on the Bill from Monday last to some future date. It certainly came at the eleventh hour, as it were, but His Majesty had hoped, as his subjects had hoped, that a means towards a settlement would have been found.

He is keenly alive to the danger of the preparations that are going on in Ireland for armed conflict, and to the peril that a hasty action or slight departure from discipline on either side might easily plunge the island into the horrors of a civil war, even before the Home Rule Bill became law. He was also influenced by the receipt of a petition sent to him personally, a course never before adopted since he has been King, and more numerously signed, he believes, than any other petition for any purpose has ever been.

His Majesty was influenced wholly by a desire to maintain peace in Ireland, and it is greatly to be regretted that any section of the Press has either wilfully, or without understanding, made it appear that he had any intention to interfere with the proper course of action on the part of his Ministers, or with the procedure of Parliament, or was seeking to exert his influence either for or against the Home Rule Bill.

The then editor of the *Standard*, Mr. Herbert A. White, wrote: "The above statement may be taken as reflecting accurately the aim and intentions of the King on this historic occasion. It is directed to controvert the ill-informed statements of Radical contemporaries."

THE REBELLION IN 1916

Who were mainly to blame for the revolutionary events in Ireland which, in the Easter week of 1916, dealt the Empire so heavy a blow? Judging by the declarations of Mr. Asquith (then Premier) and Mr. Birrell (Chief Secretary), they were profoundly ignorant of the action not merely contemplated, but determined upon, by the Sinn-Feiners! Could we accept the spoken word of the Prime Minister and the Irish Secretary? Either the Viceroy (Lord Wimborne) had grossly neglected his duty to the King, and consequently to the country, or Messrs. Asquith and Birrell had economised the truth in their published Parliamentary utterances.

Long prior to the Dublin cataclysm Mr. Asquith had lost the confidence of a large section of the country. Among his impeachers were soldiers—distinguished officers—who heaped imprecations on his head for his vacillation, his feebleness and indecision, his continuous shilly-shallying, his proved incapacity as a leader. Their language and opprobrious epithets, uttered in my hearing, were too violent to print. On one point the malcontents were in complete accord—that the Government had been frequently warned of the certainty that the rebels were bent upon attempting the capture of the Irish capital. Attacks upon the Bank of Ireland and the Castle were in the forefront of the original programme. Now, if the Viceroy did, as he asserted he did, convey warnings to the Government, and if those warnings passed unheeded, there was only one course left to him to pursue—he should have resigned, and the Under-Secretary, Sir Matthew Nathan, should have taken a similar step. It is true that such action would have convicted Mr. Asquith and Mr. Birrell of making untrue statements in Parliament, and those gentlemen would have had to take the consequences of their conduct. . . . Later (May 10, 1916) Lord Wimborne did resign the Lord-Lieutenancy, Lieutenant-Colonel Sir Matthew Nathan vacated the Under-Secretaryship, Mr. Birrell had previously resigned, and a Commission of Inquiry was appointed—Lord Hardinge of Penshurst, Sir Montague Shearman (a Judge of the High Court), and Sir Mackenzie Chalmers. On July 31, 1916, Mr. Asquith announced the appointment of Mr. Duke, K.C., in succession to Mr. Birrell, and on August 7 it was made known that Lord Wimborne had been reappointed Viceroy.

The Report of the Royal Commission on the Irish Rebellion was issued on July 3, 1916. "We do not think," said the Commissioners, "that any responsibility rests upon the Lord-Lieutenant. He was appointed in February, 1915, and was in no way answerable for the policy of the Government. We are, however, of the opinion that the Chief Secretary, as the administrative head of your Majesty's Government in Ireland, is primarily responsible for the situation that was allowed to arise and the outbreak that occurred. Sir Matthew Nathan assumed office as Under-Secretary to the Irish Government in September, 1914, only. In our view he carried out with the utmost loyalty the policy of the Government and of his immediate superior, the Chief Secretary, but we consider that he did not sufficiently impress upon the Chief Secretary during the latter's prolonged absences from Dublin the necessity for more active measures to remedy the situation in Ireland, which on December 18 last in a letter to the Chief Secretary he described as 'most serious and menacing.'"

The Commissioners were "satisfied that Sir Neville Chamberlain (Inspector-General of the Royal Irish Constabulary) and Colonel Edgeworth-Johnstone (Chief Commissioner of the Dublin Metropolitan Police) required their subordinates to furnish, and did receive from their subordinates, full and exact reports as to the nature, progress, and aims of the various armed associations in Ireland. From these sources the Government had abundant material on which they could have acted many months before the leaders themselves contemplated any actual rising. . . . We do not attach any responsibility to the military authorities in Ireland for the rebellion or its results . . . The general danger of the situation was clearly pointed out to the Irish Government by the military authorities, on their own initiative, in February last, *but the warning fell on unheeding ears.*"

The Commissioners summarised the incidents which led up to the rising at Easter, and going back to the winter of 1913, when the "Citizen Army," partly armed, was formed during the industrial strikes in Dublin, said: "This lawless display of force should have been a warning against the recent policy of permitting the indiscriminate arming of civilians in Ireland in times of turbulence and faction. . . . The Irish people [as Sir David Harrel said in his evidence] are easily led, and it is therefore the more incumbent on Government to nip lawlessness and disorder in the bud."

An important part of the Report dealt with the surreptitious landing of arms in Ulster in April, 1914. This was followed three months later (July 26) by the notorious open landing of arms and ammunition at Howth for the Irish National Volunteers, when Mr. W. V. Harrel, the Assistant Commissioner of Dublin Police (son of Sir David), called in soldiers to help in disarming the Volunteers, The Commissioners said:

> Mr. Harrel's subsequent resignation was looked upon by the public in Dublin as tantamount to dismissal, and it tended to discourage the Dublin police from initiative in enforcing the law. Further, his dismissal tended to weaken the authority of the police, as it gave rise to the opinion among the more ignorant classes that in any case of disorder the Government might not support their action. No action was taken to prosecute those who landed arms either at Larne or at Howth, and *the restriction on the importation of arms into Ireland was removed on the very day after war broke out.*

> It is clear [the Report continues] that the insurrection was caused by two bodies of men allied together for this purpose and known as the Irish Volunteers and the Citizen Army. It is now a matter of common notoriety that the Irish Volunteers have been in communication with the authorities in Germany and were for a long time known to be supplied with money through Irish-American societies. This was so stated in public by Mr. John McNeill on November 8, 1914. It was suspected long before the outbreak that some of the money came from German sources.

The daring act of gun-running at Howth, the consequential affray in Dublin between the people and the British troops, and the action taken by Mr. Harrel are all referred to in the Report of the Commission presided over by Lord Hardinge; therefore the incident may be briefly narrated here. On Sunday, July 26, 1914, about 1000 National Volunteers arrived at Howth at noon. A yacht had just anchored at the pier. On the vessel were 2500 Lee-Enfield rifles and 125,000 rounds of ammunition, all of which were brought ashore by volunteers and boy scouts. Every volunteer carried one of the rifles; the remainder were placed in motor-cars and concealed in various parts of the country. Some coastguardsmen telephoned the news to Dublin, and Mr. Harrel, after ordering out a number of constables, made the facts known to the Under-Secretary, who sent a message directing the Assistant-Commissioner to meet him at the Castle at a quarter to three. This message did not reach Mr. Harrel, who had gone to the barracks and requisitioned two companies of the King's Own Scottish Borderers, who were at once sent by tram to Fairview, two miles from Dublin, on the Howth road.

The volunteers were met at Clontarf by police and troops, and, following upon attempts to disarm them, two soldiers, three volunteers, and a policeman were struck by pistol-shots. A number of the volunteers, rifles in hand, now made off. Previous to these events the Under-Secretary, having been unable to get into touch with Mr. Harrel, had left a written message directing that no attempt should be made to forcibly disarm the Volunteers; their names were to be taken, and the places to which the arms had been taken were to be ascertained. While marching back to Dublin a mob stoned the troops in Bachelors' Walk. Some of the exasperated soldiers fired on the crowd without being ordered to do so, with the result that three of the mob (a woman included) were killed and thirty-two wounded, while several soldiers were badly hurt by stones. Late at night (at 10.30) the mob attacked the gate of the barracks and were driven off by the police.

When the tragic episode came under review in the House of Commons (July 27) Mr. Birrell said Mr. Harrel had been suspended, and an inquiry into the conduct of the military would be held forthwith; he referred to what he termed Mr. Harrel's "act of extraordinary indiscretion." Mr. Bonar Law, referring to Mr. Harrel, said, and justly, that the Government in Ireland had "hunted out a scapegoat to save their own skin."

A week later the Government appointed a Commission to inquire into the affray, and on October 1, 1914, the Commissioners (Lord Shaw, Mr. Justice Maloney, and the Right Hon. W. D. Andrews—the latter a retired Irish Judge) issued their Report.

They declared that the employment of the police and the military was illegal; that General Cuthbert, who allowed the military to be used, was wrong in doing so, that they were not justified in firing, and that the twenty-one soldiers who fired did so without orders, but believing that they had them.

[illegible]
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER VII

KING GEORGE AND QUEEN MARY IN PARIS (1914)

ITINERARY

Tuesday, April 21, 1914

8.40 a.m. The King and Queen will leave Victoria Station for Dover.

The Lady in Waiting and the two Equerries in Waiting will attend their Majesties from Buckingham Palace. The remainder of the Suite will meet their Majesties at Victoria Station.

Travelling Escort; Landaus and Fours; Scarlet Liveries.

(Dress: For Civilians: Tall Hat, Frock Coat. For Officers: Frock Coat and Cap.)

Their Majesties will cross over in the Royal Yacht *Alexandra*, which will be escorted by H.M.S. *Birmingham* and H.M.S. *Nottingham*. In mid-Channel they will be joined by the French Escort consisting of two Cruisers and six Destroyers.

10.20 a.m. Their Majesties will be received at Dover by the Lord-Lieutenant, the Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and the General Officer Commanding in Chief.

12.15 p.m. Their Majesties land at Calais, and will be received by the Prefect of the Pas-de-Calais, the General Officer Commanding the Army Corps, and the General Commanding the Infantry Division, and the Mayor.

There will be a Guard of Honour on the Landing Stage, which the King will inspect.

(Dress: For Civilians: Tall Hat, Frock Coat. For Officers: Full Dress.)

12.20 p.m. The train will leave for Paris.

3.27 p.m. The train will stop at Chantilly for five minutes.

THE KING AND PRESIDENT POINCARÉ
(LEAVING THE BOIS DE BOULOGNE STATION
FOR THE MINISTRY OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS, APRIL, 1914)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

(Gentlemen of the King's Suite should be in Uniform, but it will not be necessary for the Ladies to appear.)

The English Naval and Military Attachés in Paris will join the Royal train.

The Members of the French Suite to be attached during the visit will be presented on the platform by the Ambassador.

On the conclusion of the Presentations, the King and Queen will return to their carriages accompanied by the Ambassador, and the French Suite will be taken to the Restaurant Car, and travel on to Paris with their Majesties' Suite.

4.35 p.m. Their Majestics will arrive at Paris (Avenue du Bois de Boulogne), where they will be received by the President of the French Republic.

(Dress for the Suite: Civilians: Full Dress with Trousers. Officers: Full Dress.)

The following will be present, and will be presented by the President:

Le Président du Sénat,
Le Président de la Chambre des Députés.
Le Président du Conseil.
Les Ministres et Sous-Secrétaires d'Etat.
Le Grand Chancelier de la Légion d'Honneur.
Le Préfet de la Seine.
Le Préfet de Police.
Le Président du Conseil Municipal de Paris.
Le Président du Conseil Général de la Seine.

The King will inspect the Guard of Honour of the Garde Républicaine.

Their Majesties, accompanied by the President and Madame Poincaré, will drive to the Ministry for Foreign Affairs.

The Suite will follow in carriages told off for their use.

A Regiment of Cuirassiers, with Standard, will escort the carriages.

The streets will be lined with Troops from the Paris Garrison.

5.30 p.m. Their Majesties will leave the Ministry for Foreign Affairs, accompanied by all the Suite, and pay an official visit to the President and Madame Poincaré at the Elysée Palace, returning immediately afterwards.

6.15 p.m. The King will receive the Corps Diplomatique at the Ministry for Foreign Affairs.

8 p.m. Official Dinner given by the President at the Elysée Palace.

(Dress: For Civilians: Full Dress with Trousers. For Officers: Full Dress.)

After dinner there will be a Theatrical Representation lasting about one hour.

WEDNESDAY, APRIL 22

11.30 a.m. Their Majesties will receive British Deputations at the Embassy.

12 noon. Their Majesties, accompanied by the Mistress of the Robes, one Lady in Waiting, one Equerry in Waiting, and the Members of the French Suite, will have Déjeuner with the Ambassador at the Embassy.

1.45 p.m. The President and Madame Poincaré will come to the Embassy and accompany their Majesties to the Review Ground at Vincennes.

(Dress: For Civilians: Tall Hat, Frock Coat. For Officers: Full Dress.)

3 p.m. Review of the Troops at Vincennes.

4.15 p.m. Their Majesties will leave the Review Ground.

4.45 p.m. Reception of Addresses at the Hôtel de Ville.

5.15 p.m. Their Majesties will leave the Hôtel de Ville.

8 p.m. The President and Madame Poincaré will dine with their Majesties at the Embassy.

(Dress: For Civilians: Full Dress with trousers. For Officers: Full Dress.)

10 p.m. Gala performance at the Opera.

THURSDAY, APRIL 23

10.20 a.m. Their Majesties will visit the British Hospital and the Arts and Crafts Exhibition at the Musée des Arts Décoratifs.

12.30 p.m. Their Majesties will have luncheon with the Marquis de Breteuil.

They will be attended by the Mistress of the Robes, Lady in Waiting, one Equerry in Waiting, and a Member of the French Suite.

2.30 p.m. Their Majesties will drive to the Races at Auteuil.

Those Members of the Suite not in attendance will join their Majesties at the Races.

(Dress: Tall Hat and Frock Coat for both Civilians and Officers.)

8 p.m. Their Majestics will dine with the President of the Council at the Ministry for Foreign Affairs.

(Dress: Plain evening clothes. Household evening clothes for members of the Household; trousers and not knee breeches.)

FRIDAY, APRIL 24

10.15 a.m. Their Majesties will leave Paris by the Gare des Invalides.

(Dress: For Civilians: Tall Hats, Frock Coats. Officers: Frock Coat and Cap.)

5 p.m. On arrival at Dover an address from the Mayor and Corporation will be presented to the King.

6.40 p.m. Arrival in London.

The members of the Royal suite (added the *Times*) were thus lodged during the visit:

AT THE MINISTRY FOR FOREIGN AFFAIRS: The Duchess of Devonshire, the Lady Desborough, the Lord Stamfordham, Lieut.-Colonel Sir Frederick Ponsonby, and Major the Lord Charles Nairne.

AT THE BRITISH EMBASSY: The Rt. Hon. Sir Edward Grey and Sir William Tyrrell.

AT THE HÔTEL CRILLON: Lord Annaly, the Earl of Shaftesbury, Sir James Reid, Colonel the Hon. W. Lambton, Mr. H. F. Montgomery, Mr. H. H. Jalland, and Superintendent Quinn.

King George's winning manner and *sans-gêne* were a prime cause of his immediate popularity in Paris in April, 1914. Like his father, who was justly credited with being the best-mannered man in Europe, George V does not, as so many who, unlike His Majesty, were reared on the banks of the Isis, greet strangers

With one Oxonian stare from heel to head,

but receives them with that easy grace which Edward VII imparted to both his sons. King George's *bonhomie* was the talk of high and low; and when, standing at the buffet at the Hôtel de

Ville, sipping a refreshing *sirop*, he was seen to clink glasses with those near him, all were eager to *trinquer* with the Sovereign. Their Majesties had a "good Press"—that they were certain to have. Publicists like M. Henri Lavedan, the eminent Academician; M. Meneval, M. Delimal, M. Coudurier de Chassaigne (London correspondent of the *Figaro*), and many others, the pick of the journalistic basket, put their hearts into the task. The perfection of form, grace of expression, and the poetical fervour which marked their tributes of welcome were such as to lay us under a deep debt of obligation to the leaders of thought and opinion of the friendly and allied Republic, the "great nation" of the past and the greater one of to-day. These demonstrations of affectionate goodwill could not be done full justice to by the Paris correspondents of our papers; still less can they be suitably acknowledged in these pages. But, as they form part—and a sensible part—of international history, they must not pass wholly unnoticed, for they are proofs of the gratifying cordiality between the two countries which was fostered and secured many years ago by the persuasive tact and skilful diplomacy of the Sovereign whose son was the recipient, with his consort, of that unparalleled welcome.

L'Illustration is to France what the *Illustrated London News*, the *Graphic*, and the *Sphere* are to us. Its number devoted to the visit to Paris of our Sovereigns was a treasure indeed; and in that issue of *L'Illustration* (April 25, 1914) M. Henri Lavedan (of the Académie Française) paid a tribute to the King and Queen which, for fervent and eloquent language, could not have been surpassed, perhaps not equalled. I saw no reference to it in our papers; hence, the copious extracts from it which I have now Englished.

More, perhaps, than all their sceptred and crowned cousins, King George and Queen Mary (wrote M. Lavedan) have been placed, by their natural seriousness and character, in an intellectual and a moral situation to seize and comprehend at their leisure the true sense of their reception by Paris in the name of France. In the gesture of our reception they have been able to discern the universal spirit which dictated it.

The full-blossomed flower of our friendship has led them to touch and measure its deep roots. It was all-important that, despite their knowledge of that friendship, acquired and confirmed by the necessities and the interests of politics, the British Sovereigns should have direct and tangible confirmation of our feeling towards them. That confirmation they received with the same frankness with which it was given; nor can they fail henceforward to do for tightening the bonds of our *Entente* more than all the zeal and enterprise of Cabinets.

Besides, George V had here, *chez nous*, in order to be immediately *en pays de connaissance*, the most illustrious and the best of precedents—that of his father, of whom we have faithfully preserved the touching, charming, respectful, admiring, and grateful souvenir. Whilst George V is a *King*, he is at the same time a *son*, which for him as well as for us is not a trivial title when the father's name was Edward VII. And what adds an exceptional value, a rare savour, to this *rapprochement* in our thoughts is that King George was able to give us an imitation of his glorious father without furnishing us with a foreshadowed or too natural a resemblance. He recalls him, he evokes him, he honours him, he continues him, by qualities inherited from him which have become his own. He differs from his father by deriving his inspiration from him without being inferior to him, this evidencing a transcendent superiority. King George has in particular retained from his teaching what the paternal experience had, with age, acquired so largely, foresight and wisdom. After being, in his time, "the son of the Prince of Wales," George V is to-day exclusively "the son of the King," the worthy son of the very great King, the noble King, the King reasonable and highly enlightened, who for ten years kept himself *au courant* of the proceedings of Ministers and of diplomatic dispatches, associating his son with all that he did, with his preoccupations and his fears, with all his political and international work.

Thus prepared, directed, and formed, George V found himself marvellously well equipped to carry on a succession which to any one but himself would have been heavy and perilous. He was the intended, opportune, and necessary Sovereign. We may even believe that he came at the right time for the welfare of England, and that upon the ground cultivated and sown in advance by Edward VII it is he who was the most capable of pursuing the paternal culture and watching the blossoming of his vast thoughts. He has since let this be seen and has proved it.

It has appeared excellent that the actual King, without failing in the tradition and practice of filial religion, offers nevertheless an image of his own, personal to himself, and quite different from that to which the son of Queen Victoria, by his prestige and his charm, had accustomed us.

Never before has England had greater need than at present of a Sovereign strictly and resolutely *English.* Such a chief, of Imperialist faith, demanded by the menaces of an epoch, she has the happiness of possessing in the person, ideally British, of George V. And we, on our part, should congratulate ourselves that it is so, since he is the King, at once soldier and sailor, anxious to remain the guardian of the European equilibrium, who draws from these fundamental beliefs the reasoned energy of an *Entente Française* made stronger every day.

Happy nation, whom the pleasures of change have not tempted! Solid, staunch nation, which stands like a rock in the torrent and seas, without wavering, the water flowing around it which in the course of centuries will smooth it! The Lord Mayor's wig would sooner begin to grow than a true English heart would begin to be disgusted with its government or secretly love the things which are new. Sleep your sleep through while dreams of eloquence are flitting, you, my lords, on your seats at Westminster, you, Speaker, on your woolsack (*sic*), and you, your gracious Majesty, in your palace of the Sleeping Beauty, at Windsor, with its thousand turrets; at Osborne, with its gently sloping lawns; at Hampton Court, where tame deer ruminate among the bushes. Sleep your deep sleep till the day when the subterranean thunder of dynamite will suddenly awaken and for one moment dazzle you. Till then let your august ears be filled with the cry of "Fidelity, fidelity," which your good people shout under your windows; you can complacently look down on the joyous dances in which large-footed England, Scotland, with eyes deep as her lakes, and Ireland also, though limping and bruised, are uniting, crying with all their power, "God save the King!"

This century is the fifth act in the Drama of the Kings. . . . Palaces become hostelries from which one king passes through the door while another enters in at the window; all frontier roads have seen Royal fugitives vanish rapidly into the night; in front of suburban cottages the peasants have said to each other, "Here lives a former king, and here an abdicated emperor." Far away in the snow a good Tsar is torn to pieces by a bomb thrown on his carriage road; farther away still a king is killed by a pistol-shot in the full glare of a *bal masqué*, and a pretty little round hole, slightly scorched at the edge, through which the bullet entered, is still shown in his pink domino; in another country, among romantic lakes, a mad king, drunk with music, escapes his keepers and drowns himself, like a poor nightingale, in one of his own lakes; again, among the canals and reclaimed bogs, the last of the great House of Orange dies under the roof where, through the ambition of the first king of his race, the brothers De Witt were assassinated. Terrible finger of destiny, which points for generations of kings to the distant day of retribution!

Paris rejoiced at saluting and acclaiming, with the respectful admiration that her virtues, ornamented with grace, command, Queen Mary, as nobly and resolutely English as her consort, having, like him, courage, wisdom, virile goodness, and healthy gaiety, loving, like him, after accomplishing the duties of her position, only the home, that life by the hearth by the side of George V, who consults and listens to her—a vigilant *rôle* every minute of the day. In the cordial and profound deference paid to them the King and Queen have surely felt the noble homage inspired by soul and character far more than by the grandeur of rank.

II

Paris in Raptures with Their Majesties

This visit of the King and Queen naturally reminded the Paris publicists of the bitter feeling which had arisen between the two countries over Commandant Marchand and Fashoda, when, said M. Jean Meneval,* "le Gouvernement Anglais avait adressé à la France de brutales sommations." And, again, when we were at war with the Boers, "la méfiance et la rancune étaient tenaces et ne cherchaient que l'occasion de se manifester." Every victory gained by the Boers was regarded as a triumph for France! In the *cafés-concerts* ("le Français traduit tout par les chansons") there was a song with the chorus—

Nous venge de Fachoda
Ce petit peuple-là.

---

* *Je Sais Tout*, April, 1914.

When President Kruger arrived in Paris, "accompanied by some of the generals of the valiant South African Republics," to seek the intervention of France for his people, the ovations with which he was greeted were mingled with "the expression of the desire to avenge the recent wound." To-day, at a few steps from the hotel at which President Kruger showed himself to a population *en délire*, there is a statue of King Edward VII. "Such is the miracle, too recent for us to have lost the recollection of its suddenness." Then came the visit of King Edward, "who conceived a revolution in the policy of France and England," and all was well. "In the following year (1904) President Loubet went to London to return the King's visit; and he brought back that famous accord which opened an era of friendship deep and durable. On both sides of the Channel the greatest joy was manifested in April (1914) by the arrival of the English Sovereigns in Paris, because this visit of King George and Queen Mary constituted a new affirmation of the unshaken solidity of the Entente."

King George and his consort had not been together in Paris since the death of King Edward. They were in the French capital in 1908, when they returned from Darmstadt, and remained, as Lord and Lady Killarney, for several days, exchanging only private visits with the President. "The fact that Paris was the first capital to officially receive the English Sovereigns deserves to be underlined. It was an evidence of friendship and sympathy of high political import, of which France ought to be both happy and proud." Until April

"King George was little known in France. But the photographs and the illustrated papers had made him popular owing to his great resemblance to his cousin the Tsar—the same figure, the same cut of the beard, the same look, *un peu voilé*, the same meticulous and timid manner."

After the death of the Duke of Clarence (1892) King Edward wished that his successor to the Throne should become fully acquainted with the British Empire. . . . The Prince and his consort went first to Australia, New Zealand, Canada, and South Africa. Later the Prince visited Quebec and the Cape. Then the princely pair paid their first visit to India. On their second journey to India (1912) the King, with Lord Kitchener, made a minute inspection of the land forces, so that, in M. Meneval's words, it is correct to say that no War Minister has ever come into closer touch with all the military elements of the British Empire than George V.

Queen Mary made an instantaneous impression upon the Parisians, who saw in her eyes "the prettiest frankness" and insisted that "her smile was full of a delicate kindness and sincerity" which fascinated all who could get near her. "The whiteness of the aigrettes in her hat exactly suited the gracious face beneath." To the Parisians the King, with his slightly bronzed face and "solid build and look of strength, embodied the traditional physique of his race."

"If [wrote M. J. Delimal*] the people of Paris, from the *midinettes* to the politicians, cheered King Edward so spontaneously and so heartily, it was because they recognised in him one who was almost a compatriot: he was so Parisian. King George has nothing of the Parisian about him. He is reserved even to coldness, speaking little and smiling only occasionally, waiting for people's sympathy rather than anticipating it. He is so thoroughly English that, to understand and appreciate him, one must know something of the British character—know that behind his reserve there are sincere warmth, charming familiarity, loyalty, and fidelity which will stand every trial. Happily, these things, of which the Parisians were ignorant not so very long ago, have been brought home to them during the ten years' existence of the *Entente cordiale*. That is why we cannot doubt that they will give to the rather severe smiles of the King and Queen a reception not less enthusiastic than they gave in May, 1903, to King Edward's *bon sourire*." *

---

* The *Temps*, April 21, 1914.

King George's education (adds my *confrère* in his very detailed letter) differed widely from that of his father. King Edward knew by experience that the essential thing for a Sovereign was a knowledge of men; consequently, he resolved that his sons should be educated not alone, but with boys of their own age. Legend had it that the Duke of York, after sixteen years of naval life, was "un marin de la vieille école, buvant sec et n'ayant pas peur des aventures. La réalité est moins pittoresque." Of delicate health, Prince George was compelled to adopt the *régime* enforced by that American Minister of the Navy, Mr. Daniel, upon United

---

* M. Delimal's genial prediction was amply fulfilled. The Parisians went into raptures with their Majesties, who were prodigal of their smiles throughout the visit.

States officers: the *régime* of mineral water and lemon-juice. That the stories told of the sailor Prince found ready credence was because his private life, like the history of happy peoples, appeared rather unattractive to persons of a romantic turn of mind.

Most of the leisure left to the King by the protocol is shared by His Majesty with the Queen and their family. King George is really, to employ the English expression, the most domesticated husband in the United Kingdom. His existence differs very little from that of a *bourgeois* of the middle class. When he is not inaugurating a statue, or a hospital, most of his time is passed in working and in keeping himself *au courant* of affairs. In the evening some of their Majesties' friends assemble, always the same, all selected from *un petit monde irréprochable*, unlike the rather miscellaneous *monde* met with at the Court of King Edward. There are not many balls or official receptions. The King's amusements are also very simple. If he goes occasionally to the races, it is from tradition rather than from taste. He has a horror of cards and of gambling generally. Only shooting really amuses him; as all know, he is an excellent shot.

In this life so *rangée* amusements of all kinds have a very small place. King George is conscious of the mission confided to him by Providence and believes that first and foremost he must set his people an example of work. It need not be said that his faith is *une foi vive*. Despite his rather Puritanical manner, he is in no wise intolerant. He personally insisted upon a modification of the particularly wounding formula for Catholics which, upon ascending the Throne, English Sovereigns had to pronounce; and he succeeded in substituting a formula which, while it avoided giving offence to Protestants, did not *froisser* his Catholic subjects. Indifference in religious matters is really disagreeable to him, and whenever he has had an opportunity of doing so he has not concealed the danger for a great people of such indifference. For example, when he was in India he said one day with much warmth: "How can you hope to continue to govern the most religious people in the world if you are not yourselves religious?"

"*Au fond*, the difference between King George and his father is not perhaps as great as some might think. It must not be forgotten that King Edward always attended church on Sunday, and never went to the races on that day. But he had travelled abroad so often that he finished by adopting, exteriorly at least, *des allures très libres*. King George, who has never made more than rapid trips to the Continent, but has travelled almost exclusively in the British colonies, remains absolutely English.

"The figure of King Edward was perhaps most attractive to foreigners; that of King George is infinitely more representative of his race and his country, recalling to all who might be tempted to forget it how much Old England is being slowly transformed, and how much vitality, despite appearances, there still remains in all its traditions."

The Queen's Noble Simplicity as Wife and Mother

M. Coudurier de Chassaigne had some charming things to say about the Queen in *L'Illustration.* These were intended for publication at the time in the *Illustrated London News.* Lack of space, however, prevented them from appearing in that famous journal, and M. Coudurier de Chassaigne and the editor of the *Illustrated London News,* jointly and severally, most generously permitted me to utilise them in this work from my own translation.

Like all happy people (wrote my brilliant *confrère,* who is the justly popular President of the Foreign Press Association in London), the Queen's life contains nothing whereon one can found a sensational story. What is specially praiseworthy is the noble simplicity of her existence as wife and mother, which might well serve as a model for every woman in the Kingdom. Yet the Queen neglects none of her public duties. She knows how to wear with grace and dignity the dresses of gold, silver, and silk which Court etiquette insists upon; but her heart is not in vain outward show. She is one of the most cultivated women in the Empire, reading much, and specially interesting herself in sociological books, histories, and memoirs. The Queen has also exceptional artistic tastes. She is as well acquainted as the custodians with the art marvels which fill Buckingham Palace and Windsor Castle. Every beautiful and rare object is familiar to her, from the *chefs-d'œuvre* of artists like Vandyke, Rubens, Claude le Lorrain, and Gainsborough, to the unique collections of Sèvres porcelaines, which form one of the Royal treasures most cherished by Her Majesty. Since her accession the Queen, with a surprising knowledge of styles, has grouped in a harmonious *ensemble* the furniture, pictures, and porcelaines of the same epoch; thus there are in Buckingham Palace and Windsor Castle rooms, boudoirs, salons, and galleries which form faithful reproductions of interior-apartments at the most picturesque and captivating periods of the history of art in England, in Europe, and even in the East. A Chinese boudoir is a veritable bijou; a Hindu room an enchantment to the eyes and the imagination.

We see, then, that the real personality of the Queen is visible only in the intimacy of the home, or when Her Majesty, leaving far behind her palaces and castles, goes into the poorest houses in London and the country taking to their lowly occupants her benevolent sympathy and her practical charity. The cherished mother of her six children, whose lives she has followed step by step, and who, thanks to her, have known, although of Royal birth, all the joys of a hearth where reign tenderness, confidence, and love, she is also the adored companion of her Royal spouse, who has made her his *confidante* at all times.

I shall never forget what I consider was the most touching incident at their Majesties' coronation. When the Archbishop of Canterbury had placed the crown on the King's head His Majesty glanced at the Queen, who, standing, saw the King in all his splendour. The husband and the wife regarded each other long and tenderly. From my place in the north transept I saw a fugitive sparkle in the Queen's eyes, accompanied by a scarcely perceptible trembling. A few seconds afterwards the Queen was weeping. Then, with her lace handkerchief, she slowly dried the tears which were running down her face. It was not until later that the Queen subdued her emotion.

We had had the spectacle, infinitely more impressive than all the official pomp, magnificent as it was, of this deep and tender love of a simple wife for her husband, whose joys and sorrows, inquietudes and successes, anguish and glory she partakes. These tears of the Queen, shed at the supreme moment of the coronation of George V, crystallised themselves in my memory like the most sparkling gem, the rarest and most precious of this dazzling *féerie*. Happy is the nation which has for Sovereigns a King and a Queen united by such close ties of love and affection! The King and Queen have the same conception of duty. With the same heart they devote themselves to the greatness and the prosperity of their country, and to the happiness of their subjects.

M. Coudurier de Chassaigne believes (and I cordially agree with him) that posterity will recognise in George V the most conscientious and impartial of the *chefs d'état* of contemporary Europe; and in proof of his assertion he now narrates *par le menu* one of His Majesty's ordinary day's routine, for the exactitude of which I can vouch.

When the King is at Buckingham Palace he rises early. He has finished dressing before eight, and when the weather permits he sometimes rides in the Row with Princess Mary, who celebrated her seventeenth birthday on April 25, 1914, the day after her parents' return from Paris. Should it be a wet or dull morning, His Majesty goes through his letters before breakfast. The King keeps in epistolary touch with his innumerable relatives at the European Courts. Whenever he cannot, for one reason or other, pay his daily visit to Queen Alexandra, he writes to his mother not merely a few lines, but often several pages, informing her of all that has happened. The King is also credited with writing daily to his cousins, and to even more distant relatives abroad. At a quarter past nine the King and Queen breakfast together, being joined by Princess Mary and those of her brothers who are at the Palace. The frugality of their Majesties is proverbial. The breakfast menu is of the simplest: China tea, toast, marmalade, and fish or eggs. This meal is soon over, and usually by half-past nine the King is in his study, where he remains until luncheon.

Between breakfast and lunch His Majesty receives the principal members of his household—Sir William Carington,* Lord Stamfordham, Colonel Sir Frederick Ponsonby or Colonel Clive Wigram, and Sir Derek Keppel. The King's writing-table is kept in perfect order, so that His Majesty can always lay his hand upon any letter or document which he requires. Towards eleven o'clock all the London papers are brought in. Certain articles and paragraphs are marked with a blue pencil; but the papers are all laid before the King unmutilated; for His Majesty insists upon seeing everything himself. He reads everything of interest in the journals, and what he reads he remembers (as, I may add, did King Edward). The newspapers which he cannot read before lunch he goes through in the afternoon or evening. His Majesty is kept *au courant* of all that happens in the Government offices. Before lunch the King gives audience to Ambassadors and Ministers Plenipotentiary, Colonial Governors, naval and military superior officers; thus he has not a moment's leisure between breakfast and lunch. This latter meal (served at half-past one) is of democratic simplicity: two dishes at most, fish and meat; an *entremets*, fruit, and a cup of coffee.

---

* Died October 7, 1914.

By a quarter to three the work left over from the morning is finished, and the King gives brief audiences* to Ministers and official personages. Shortly after three the King, often accompanied by the Queen, visits his mother and other members of the Royal Family. Sometimes His Majesty plays racquets for an hour in the afternoon.† Racquets and riding form the King's principal exercise when he is in London; but he frequently strolls through the extensive grounds of Buckingham Palace.

Tea is served at five o'clock, and then their Majesties can chat over the events of the day. From half-past five until after eight the King is hard at work in his study. At half-past eight the Royal couple and their children dine. If there are no guests the evening menu is as simple as the other meals; one kind of fish and one of meat, an *entremets*, fruit, and coffee. When their Majesties are not at the theatre or "in the world" they retire early, generally between ten and eleven. Unlike his father, King George is not a great cigar smoker. He does not, however, disdain a good Havana or a cheroot; but he prefers cigarettes, although he is a very moderate smoker even of these.

---

* During the Irish trouble in March and April, 1914, some of these audiences were of portentous length.

† In recent years a large conservatory was converted into a full-sized racquets court, access to which is gained direct from the Royal apartments. There is a smaller court at Marlborough House.

The King's life in the country is too well known to need recapitulation here. His Majesty has been for many years one of our "crack" shots. He prefers walking to riding. He will walk for hours about Sandringham, watching the work on the estate and inquiring into the condition of the labourers and others. (Some account of the numerous visits of their Majesties to various parts of the country, particularly within the last three years, is given elsewhere in this work; and their interest in London's charitable institutions is also noted.) A truly democratic Sovereign, the King devotes the best of his thoughts to the laborious people *qui est la richesse de son Empire*; and in this generous work he has no more devoted and laborious helper than Queen Mary.

No court (writes M. Coudurier) is more strictly closed to inquirers than the Court of St. James's. As to journalists (is it necessary to say it?), they never penetrate into the arenas of the Palace, where all is calm, silence, and discretion. A little story will show how much His Majesty likes to mix familiarly with his former comrades. Some years ago, when he was still Prince of Wales, he used to regularly

THE QUEEN AND MME. POINCARÉ
(PARIS, APRIL, 1914)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

attend the annual dinner at the Naval School at Greenwich of those who had passed through that institution. The Prince, on those occasions, was accompanied only by his naval aide-de-camp. He was present, not as the Heir to the Throne, but as an officer of the British Navy, to take part in a private *fête* which, did it not appear lacking in reverence, I would call a gathering of *vieux labadens*.

After dinner there was always a game of billiards—pool. At one end of the room the Prince, surrounded by his friends, talked with his wonted liveliness. When it came to the Prince's turn to play, the marker (an inexperienced "sub") showed signs of perturbation. Approaching the Prince's aide-de-camp the marker said nervously: "Lieutenant, what am I to call His Royal Highness? Ought I to say: 'It is your Royal Highness's turn to play, or red to play?'" (red being the colour of the Prince's ball). The aide-de-camp laughingly replied: "Call His Royal Highness as you would any other officer." The marker did so, greatly to the delight of the Prince at being treated as in the happy days of his youth.

THE ADIEUX

The speeches of the President and the King at the Elysée Palace (April 21) were as follows:

President POINCARÉ said:

SIRE,—Your Majesty and Her Majesty the Queen will allow me to express quite simply the intense pleasure with which the City of Paris and the entire French nation welcome the Sovereigns of the great friendly nation.

For myself, I have cherished the most grateful memories of the welcome that your Majesty gave me last year, when you extended to me in London such gracious hospitality; and the sentiments of which proof was given me, during my stay in England, by all classes of the British people found a faithful echo in the hearts of my compatriots. Public opinion unanimously associated itself, on both sides of the Channel, with the fresh demonstrations of mutual confidence and sympathy for which my journey afforded the occasion to the Governments of our two countries.

The visit that your Majesty and Her Majesty the Queen are to-day paying to France is the brilliant consecration of a friendship which has since its inception stood the test of time and experience, a friendship which has proved its permanent efficacy and which responds to the considered desire of two powerful nations, equally attached to peace, equally enthusiastic for progress, and equally accustomed to the habit of liberty.

During the too brief hours that your Majesty will pass among us you will doubtless be able to see but a small number of the physical and moral aspects of France. The festivities, artistic, sporting, and military, that you have kindly promised to attend will, however, bring before you, in a summary form, some of the elements of our national character, and you will without difficulty discern in the virtues honoured by our democracy many of the traditional forces which have made, for a long time past, the greatness and glory of Great Britain—the sense of moderation, of order, and of social discipline, the enlightened consciousness of patriotic duty, the joyful acceptance of necessary sacrifices, and the fervent pursuit of an ideal which is never eclipsed but fills with light the whole life of a nation.

After a long rivalry which had taught them imperishable lessons of esteem and mutual respect, France and Great Britain have learnt to be friends, to approximate their thoughts and to unite their efforts.

It is ten years ago to-day since the two Governments amicably settled the questions that divided them. The agreements made at that date, agreements the realisation of which had been so happily led up to by the clear-sightedness of King Edward and his advisers, very naturally gave birth to an *Entente* of a more general character, which has since become one of the surest guarantees of the balance of power in Europe.

I do not doubt that, under the auspices of your Majesty and your Government, these ties of intimacy will be daily strengthened, to the great profit of civilisation and of universal peace. This is the very sincere wish I express in the name of France.

I raise my glass to your Majesty, Her Majesty the Queen, Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, and to all the Royal Family. I drink to the prosperity of the United Kingdom.

The KING, speaking in French, replied as follows:

MONSIEUR LE PRÉSIDENT,—I have been profoundly touched by the kind and eloquent words with which you have bidden the Queen and myself welcome to the brilliant capital of your beautiful country.

I am most pleased to have had the opportunity to return the visit that you so kindly paid us last year—a visit of which the Queen and I preserve the most agreeable recollection.

I feel an altogether peculiar pleasure at finding myself in the midst of the French people on this, the tenth anniversary of those agreements by which our two countries peacefully settled all the questions that divided them. It is from those agreements that arose the so intimate and cordial relations that unite us to-day, and thanks to which we are able to labour together on the humanitarian work of civilisation and peace. I thank you, M. le Président, for having recalled that the name of my beloved father will ever remain associated with this *Entente*, and I endorse with all my heart your eloquent definition of the high and noble aims which our two countries pursue in common. Their realisation will be a benefit to both nations, and will at the same time constitute the most precious legacy that we shall be able to leave to generations to come.

The Queen and I will never forget the very hearty reception which was accorded us on our arrival. It will be very highly appreciated in my country. I am happy to think that during our stay we shall have the pleasure of admiring and appreciating what you have just called so aptly some of the elements of your national character. It is these elements which have raised France to such a high degree of civilisation and prosperity; it is above all owing to them that she occupies so worthily and so proudly her place in the world.

The Queen and I thank you, M. le Président, for your charming hospitality and your very kind reception. I raise my glass and wish you, M. le Président, a long and happy life and all prosperity and happiness to France, for whom I experience sentiments of the most profound and sincere friendship.

On April 22 the King and Queen received at H.B.M. Embassy the representatives of the British colony and its institutions, religious, charitable, commercial, and sporting. These numbered about one hundred, and represented the British colony in Paris, the British Chamber of Commerce, the Trustees of the British Charitable Fund, British subjects born in the island of Mauritius but residing in Paris, and the racing communities at Chantilly and Maisons Laffitte. Each of these deputations presented a loyal address. The members of the British Chamber of Commerce recalled the circumstance that King Edward, when receiving their loyal homage in 1903, enjoined upon them to do their utmost to develop friendship and confidence between France and England. This command, and the acts and words of King George, added the address, have encouraged the Chamber of Commerce to work for the increase of commercial relations, not only between the United Kingdom and France, but between France and the British Oversea Dominions—an endeavour already crowned with no small measure of success.

The Mauritian deputation, whose address was delivered in French, reminded their Majesties of the visit they paid some years ago to Mauritius, and added that nowhere in the Empire are their Majesties more beloved than in the ancient Ile de France, the French origin of whose inhabitants had created in their hearts an *Entente cordiale* long before it showed itself in the policy of France and England.

In answer to these loyal addresses the KING said:

GENTLEMEN,—It gives me great pleasure to meet here to-day representatives of so many of the British communities in Paris and its neighbourhood, and I heartily thank you for the assurance of loyalty and devotion to myself and the Queen to which your addresses give expression.

I am touched by the references made by the Chamber of Commerce to the trust committed to its representatives ten years ago by my father, King Edward VII, whose personality and influence largely contributed towards the understanding arrived at between this country and his own, which has since developed into those friendly relations so conducive to the general peace.

It is you, gentlemen, living here and enjoying the hospitality of the French nation, who can be powerful agents in the maintenance of this happy intimacy.

I am gratified that the Chamber of Commerce should also recall my efforts to stimulate commercial activity from an Imperial point of view, and I congratulate that body upon the success achieved in promoting trade relations between France and my Oversea Dominions.

The Queen and I deeply sympathise with the excellent work undertaken by the British Charitable Fund and the Young Men's Christian Association in this city.

I welcome with pleasure the representatives of the British population of Chantilly and Maisons Laffitte, whose daily occupation is connected with that great sport which is so characteristic of the national life of the two neighbouring countries, a sport in which we shall participate with enjoyment to-morrow.

I am especially glad to receive the loyal assurances of my Mauritian subjects in Paris, recalling those happy days which the Queen and I spent in their beautiful island now nearly thirteen years ago.

My father loved Paris, where he was always made to feel at home and could count upon a warm and sympathetic reception. If only for his sake, I felt confident that the same spirit of friendship and goodwill would on this occasion be extended to his son. The enthusiastic welcome which Paris has given us is a proof that my confidence was not overestimated.

In thanking you all for your loyal addresses, I earnestly trust that happiness and prosperity may long be granted to you in your various careers and duties.

Writing in the *Gaulois*, before the review witnessed by the King and Queen at Vincennes, General Zurlinden, former Minister of War, said: "In a few days the Army of Paris will be passed in review by King George, the beloved and respected Sovereign of the great friendly nation of England. Paris and all France will applaud with all their might on their passage that august Sovereign and the gracious

Queen Mary of England. The Army, the grand silent one, will march before them in silence. What will it be thinking of? It seems to me that it would like to say as it passes before the King, 'Sire, our three-year recruits will mark this day in the annals of the French Army. It is the first review of the 'three years.' We are happy, we are proud, to march by for the first time before your Majesty!"

The *Temps* established by elaborate genealogical tables the ties of blood that unite the English Royal Family with France: "When King George and Queen Mary set foot on the soil of France, they will have the right to say that they are treading ancestral ground. King George and Queen Mary alike have quadruple French descent; first from Charlemagne, second from Robert le Diable in the female line, third from Saint Louis, and fourth from Alexandre Dexmier d'Ollebreuse, a gentleman of Poitou, whose daughter Eléonore became, in 1676, the wife of George of Brunswick-Lüneburg, and whose grandson was George I of England."

The Royal visit ended on April 24. Before leaving French territory the KING sent the following telegram to President Poincaré:

At the moment of leaving French soil I wish to express once more to you, M. le Président, my great appreciation, as well as that of the Queen, of the so cordial and friendly reception which has been accorded to us. Our sojourn in your capital will be one of our most cherished recollections, and we shall never forget the warm reception which was given to us.

The Queen and myself are deeply touched by it, and we beg you to thank the public of Paris with all our heart. Please accept, M. le Président, my most sincere wishes for your welfare and for the maintenance of the intimate relations between the two countries.

The Queen and I beg you to convey our best regards to Mme. Poincaré.

(Signed) GEORGE, R.I.

President POINCARÉ replied as follows:

I thank your Majesty for your kind telegram and for the cordial feelings expressed in it. I am very happy to think that your Majesty and Her Majesty the Queen carry away pleasant recollections of your journey.

The city of Paris, which has had the great delight of acclaiming the Sovereigns of a friendly country, and the whole population of France, feel grateful and charmed at a visit which they will never forget.

I beg Her Majesty the Queen to accept, together with the thanks and the best wishes of Mme. Poincaré, my respectful homage, and I tender your Majesty the assurance of my devoted friendship and my best wishes for your personal happiness and for the prosperity of the United Kingdom.

RAYMOND POINCARÉ.

Upon landing at Dover (April 24) the King was presented by the Mayor with an address and made this announcement:

It has been a great satisfaction to us to renew our close and friendly relations with the great French

Republic, with which my dear father's memory will always be so closely identified. We shall never forget the warmth and enthusiasm of our reception. Wherever we went during our happy stay in Paris we have been deeply impressed.

I hope that this genuine proof of friendship and good feeling towards our country on the part of the French nation will be fully realised by my people. I thank you for your good wishes, and assure you that my earnest desires and unremitting labours will ever be directed towards the preservation of peace and to the advancement of our national welfare.

The KING sent the following letter to the Military Governor of Paris, General Michel :

May I ask you to be so kind as to express to the officers and troops who have just passed before us my sincere thanks for the magnificent spectacle which has been given us. Their bearing and the brilliant manner in which they carried out their movements are truly remarkable ; and I offer my hearty congratulations to you and to France on her fine Army.

The *Cri de Paris*, a weekly paper, not altogether opposed to the circulation of *commérages*, regaled its readers with a story that King George told some of those about him that, according to King Edward VII, any person entering the Church of Sainte Clotilde for the first time had only to place a candle there and formulate a wish to have the wish exactly fulfilled. Sir Edward Grey decided to go to Sainte Clotilde immediately. The Queen, who would have liked to follow his example, but had not the time to spare, asked him to place a candle for her at the side of his own. The church is situated at no great distance from the Foreign Ministry, and Sir Edward soon returned. He was carrying a sealed envelope, and explained that he had formulated his wish, which he had written down and placed in the envelope in order that in due time it might be seen whether the reputation of the Catholic Saint was justified. On the envelope he had written these words: "To be opened after my death, to verify the results of the wish which I made at Sainte Clotilde de Paris, April 23, 1914." Some may remember how an Italian humorist thus paraphrased a well-known national proverb: "Se non e Verdi, se bene Trovatore."

In *Truth's* piquant "Notes from Paris" (April 22), we read that Queen Mary, her mother, and her father used to stay at the "Westminster":

> In her later visits to Paris with her parents, Queen Mary was very much with those French families who belonged to the inner circle of the Comte and Comtesse de Paris at Sheen House and Stowe. In those far-off days she and the Princesse Hélène, now Duchess of Aosta, used to exchange confidences and were as sisters—so, at any rate, a secretary of the late Comte de Paris informed me at the time. The daughter of the Duke and Duchess of Teck is the first Queen Consort since 1714 who learnt to speak English as her mother tongue—a distinction that deserves notice.

In the same journal "Scrutator" wrote:

> In former days French and English Sovereigns, in the pursuit of their personal liveliness and ambitions, used to set their subjects by the ears and established the traditional enmity between them. King Edward showed us how far kings as well as people have moved from those days when he devoted himself with so much grace and good sense to repairing the breach which his predecessors had made between the two nations.

King George is now engaged in continuing his excellent work. We ought to thank both God and King when we contrast this visit to France with some of those paid by our Plantagenet Sovereigns.

With these loyal sentiments all will agree.

Mme. Marguerite Leblanc, speaking as an expert, asserted that the Queen, "if Her Majesty's visit had taught Frenchwomen anything," had made manifest to them that "the most ladylike, the richest, the most elegant, and the most practical dress is that made of Liberty satin." When the Sovereigns lunched with the Marquis * and Marquise de Breteuil the Queen wore an amaranthine Liberty dress, which, as Pepys would have said, "became her mightily."

Queen Mary's manner of dressing was greatly admired by many Parisians, who apparently took careful note of it during the brief stay of their Majesties—only from Tuesday afternoon until Friday morning—in the French capital. Ladies who had been in Paris during the Royal visit confided to the London Correspondent of the *Manchester Guardian* that the Queen had "affected Paris fashions!" This was particularly noticeable at the Opéra, where for the first time for many months people appeared to have dressed rather than undressed for the occasion. There was more material to the square yard of space at the gala performance than had been seen since the skimpy fashions began, and more jewels were worn. Half the ladies of Paris seemed to have had their jewels reset in new designs. It was particularly noticed as a sign of that unfailing tact in dress possessed by

---

* Died November 4, 1916.

Frenchwomen that Mme. Poincaré did not wear a tiara. Possibly the omission was a symbolic one, for, although the wife of the head of the State, she has no rank herself; certainly it was a correct one, for, though a charming woman with a style of her own, that style is not of the Royal type that looks best in a tiara. Possibly, too, with the clever shrewdness of the French, Mme. Poincaré, who will reign but a few years, had not chosen to invest in so extravagant a jewel, and the Frenchwoman does not live who would appear in what she does not herself own. At the Auteuil races a certain number of eccentric costumes were paraded before the King and Queen, but now the mode is *à la reine Marie* and for anything but the eccentric. Paris at the moment, indeed, tends almost to be unfashionable as the result of the Royal visit.

The Sovereigns' brilliantly successful visit to Paris ended three months before the outbreak of the war of Empires, a Republic (later several Republics), and Nations. While the French were fêting our King and Queen not a warlike note was heard in the capitals. That there was a cloud on the horizon was not noticed by the peoples: it looked scarcely larger than a man's hand, and it was not until the last days of July that it grew to alarming proportions. King George and his cousin, the then Tsar, strove personally to preserve peace, as the diplomatic "papers" and "books" prove; but the two Kaisers prevailed, and on August 4 the King's Government declared war against Germany.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER VIII

THE KING'S GREAT ADVENTURE

1914

> *Third Gentleman:* Did you see the meeting of the two Kings?
> *Second Gent:* No.
> *Third Gent:* Then you have lost a sight which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. . . . I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it, and undoes description to do it.
> *The Winter's Tale*, Act v, sc. 2.

THE King's first visit to the Front is summarised in this *communiqué*:

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *December* 5, 1914.

The King, attended by Lieut.-Colonel Lord Stamfordham and Major Clive Wigram, arrived at the Palace this evening from the Headquarters of the British Expeditionary Force in France.

During the King's visit to his Army in the field His Majesty was able to see practically all the troops except those actually in the trenches.

The King visited the headquarters of all the army corps and divisional commanders, and inspected the different departments at the General Headquarters.

His Majesty visited many of the base hospitals, receiving hospitals, and field hospitals.

The King was visited by the President of the French Republic and Monsieur Viviani, the Prime Minister of France, and also by General Joffre, Generalissimo of the Allied Forces.

His Majesty received General Foch and other French Generals whose commands are specially associated with the British Army.

The King visited the King and Queen of the Belgians and conferred upon His Majesty the Order of the Garter.

His Majesty conferred the Order of Merit upon Field-Marshal Sir John French.

Colonel the Maharajah of Bikanir and Major-General Maharajah Sir Pertab Singh, Regent of Jodhpur, aides-de-camp to the King, were in attendance upon His Majesty during the week.

While in France the King conferred the Victoria Cross, Distinguished Service Orders, and Distinguished Conduct Medals upon a number of officers and men.

Sovereigns who have not merely paid flying visits to their armies in the field, but have accompanied them into battle without actually "leading" them in the technical sense of the word, have sometimes been more of a hindrance than a moral support. The presence of Napoleon III with his staff in 1870 was deprecated after he had been in the field only a fortnight. We know how he set forth with misgivings. "It will be a long war," he said. "Don't talk about getting to Berlin 'in a month'." He left St. Cloud with his son in order to escape the "demonstrations" of the Parisians, whose universal cry was "*à Berlin!*"

The Emperor had not been with the army more than a few days ere he recognised that not only was he doing no good, but was in the way. He relinquished the supreme command to Bazaine, and would have returned to Paris with MacMahon and that General's army of 100,000, had not the Empress Regent and the War Minister Palikao ordered him to remain at the front. Hence, Sedan and the *débâcle* ; both could and would have been avoided had the Emperor gone back to the capital. Despite the warning of 1870, we saw the ex-Tsar, the King of the Belgians, and the King of Italy with their armies, and, were our country invaded, we should undoubtedly find King George in the field.

As, unlike the Third Gentleman in the play, I had not the good fortune to "see the meeting of the two Kings," and as a minute account of all the happenings, from the pen of "Eye-Witness," is contained in his invaluable volume (issued by Mr. Edward Arnold), I am dispensed from the necessity of travelling over the same ground, and will reproduce only brief extracts from the *Temps* and the *Journal*, one or two British official mems., and an incident, recorded by an Indian officer, well worthy of preservation.

The *Temps* (December 2, 1914) thus commented on the King's visit:

> The presence of the British Sovereign amidst the Allied troops appears as a solemn consecration of the indissoluble fraternity of arms that the German aggression has created between England, France, and Belgium on the western theatre of operations. In the course of this visit the King of

Great Britain and Emperor of India was saluted by warriors of the most diverse races, who had come from all the extremities of this Empire of 400,000,000 souls to defend the honour of the flag which has assured them prosperity and liberty. France addresses to him the expression of her high esteem and of her gratitude to him personally and to his country. M. Poincaré told him how much our nation appreciates the valorous help of the British Army, and the moral assistance that his statesmen have constantly given us by their words and attitude.

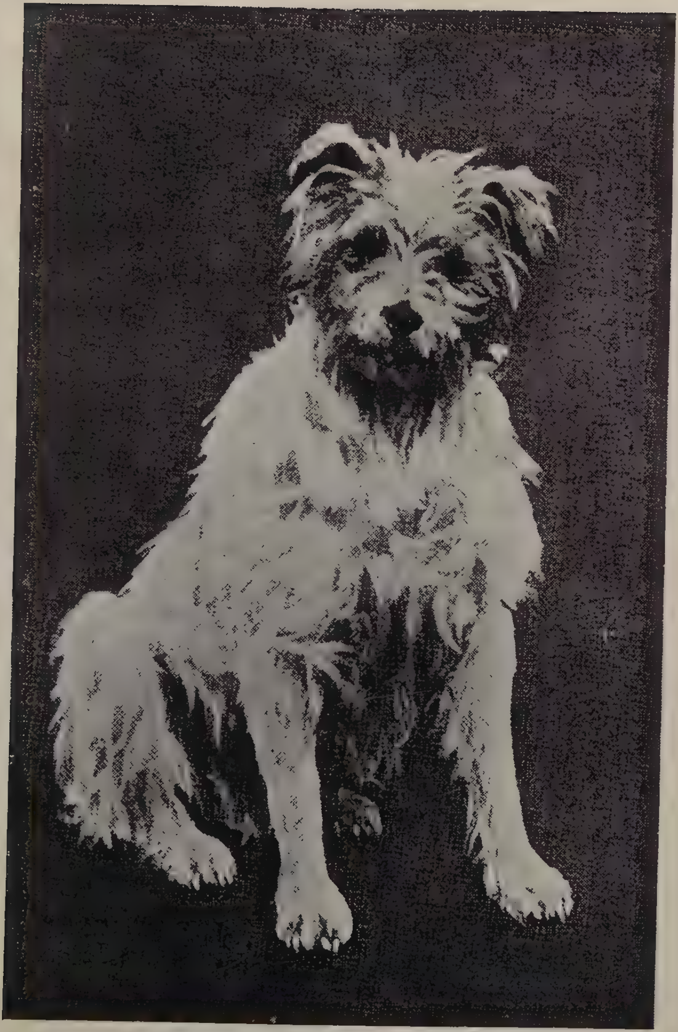
The King's visit also moves us by the serene tranquillity with which it was accomplished. England by a splendid gesture affirms her majesty of the seas. Not because German submarines have succeeded in gliding up to the coasts of France is British naval power affected any more than bombs thrown from a Taube could diminish the valour of our Army. At his own hour, on his own day, despite a wind blowing tempestuously, the King crossed the sea with a security that even disdained to dissimulate this voyage and despised the attempts at treachery which his movements might suggest to the enemy. Like his people, King George considers that the defence of civilisation imposed by German barbarism and her Allies is an honourable cause which duty compels him to stand by until its complete triumph. The sacrifices to which the British nation has consented, and those which will be demanded from it to-morrow are destined to consolidate in the world's history a progress worthy of the effort that will have created it. It is this determination that the British Sovereign wished to affirm on the morrow of the victorious resistance of Flanders, which has shattered Wilhelm II's dream of raising at Calais, opposite the English coast, the threat of a German Gibraltar.

In the *Journal* of the same date M. Saint-Brice wrote:

> The event could not have come at a more opportune moment—on the morrow of the publication of Field-Marshal French's remarkable report on the battle of Ypres. The page which the English Army is now writing in history upon the plains of Flanders—where it has already gained magnificent laurels—will be the brightest in its annals. And it is the more pleasing for us to salute this glory because it is associated with our own for the first time in this part of the world. If the past has seen English and French soldiers on many occasions fighting side by side, the Low Countries have only the memory of rivalries between them, always ardent, but always honourable. The fact that the adversaries of the past find themselves welded together in the closest alliance is a most striking comment upon the new European situation.

An episode in the King's first visit to the Front (November 29–December 4, 1914) was thus narrated by an officer in the Indian Expeditionary Force:

A red-letter day indeed—for the King turned up here at 10.45 this morning, and stayed quite a long time, inspecting detachments of the Indian Army Corps. He only crossed from England last night, I believe, stayed with the General for breakfast and saw us all before lunch, going on to the next Army Corps. It was quite the most informal show I have ever seen. He strolled up and down the ranks chatting with all and sundry, he asked two of our native officers how long they had been in the regiment—the General interpreting.



"HAPPY," THE KING'S DOG
From a Drawing by A. C. Michael
Reproduced by permission of Messrs. Hodder & Stoughton

The secret of his visit was well kept. Last night after dinner the adjutant biked over from Headquarters and said he, and I, and —— had been chosen by lot from the officers, with thirty-three men from each of the three squadrons here, to represent the regiment at an inspection by the Commander-in-Chief. Well, we went off this morning, and found similar detachments from all the corps not in the trenches. It was a dull morning and the mud was awful, and just before His Majesty was due a German aeroplane appeared heading straight for us; our guns opened fire on it, and it made off north, but it added excitement, otherwise it was a quiet morning and hardly any firing from the trenches. The King and Sir John French arrived in the first car, then the Prince of Wales driving his own car, and a crowd of Staff officers. The two Divisional Staffs were presented, and then they started walking down the lines. My new horse is a real good 'un, but can't stand "Present arms" under his nose, and he nearly backed into His Majesty as he came up from behind.

The Leicesters were in front of us; they had only come up out of the trenches at midnight, and were in a lovely state of mud and unshavedness. The King simply revelled in them. He stopped and chatted to quite every one man in three, wanted to know all about trench fighting, and didn't seem to mind a bit their being covered in mud and unshaved for days. The Prince was just as interested. He wandered about at will, paying no attention to his father, and chatting with all and sundry. One man was wearing a pair of German boots, which interested the King very much. He spent quite twenty minutes with the Leicesters, and they deserved it. They have done splendidly all through.

After that he gave two V.C.'s to gunners who had won them very early in the war, and then, when he ought to have been moving on, he began strolling up and down the line again, asking all sorts of questions, and noticing everything. At last they got him into his car to move on to the next Army Corps. The General came back to give us his message. It was that he was very pleased with all he had seen and heard; that he wanted the troops to know that both he and the Queen always kept them in their thoughts; and that he meant to see all of them again, with his own eyes, as soon as the war was over. The General gave it out very well (he is fluent in Hindustani), and it made a great impression on the men.

It was altogether a wonderful visit, so quiet and informal and businesslike: no apparent precautions or rehearsal; the King tramping about in the mud as though he were partridge shooting; while the Prince wandered about as he listed. My interpreter, a French Canadian, was amazed.

Before taking his departure from the British General Headquarters and leaving France for England on December 5, His Majesty issued the following Special Order of the Day to the Army:

Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers, and Men.

I am very glad to have been able to see my Army in the Field.

I much wished to do so in order to gain a slight experience of the life you are leading.

I wish I could have spoken to you all, to express my admiration of the splendid manner in which you have fought and are still fighting against a powerful and relentless enemy.

By your discipline, pluck, and endurance, inspired by the indomitable regimental spirit, you have not only upheld the tradition of the British Army, but added fresh lustre to its history.

I was particularly impressed by your soldierly, healthy, cheerful appearance.

I cannot share in your trials, dangers, and successes; but I can assure you of the proud confidence and gratitude of myself and of your fellow-countrymen.

We follow you in our daily thoughts on your certain road to victory.

George, R.I.

General Headquarters,
December 5, 1914.

CHAPTER IX

THE MISHAP TO THE KING IN FRANCE
1915

On October 28, 1915, we had been anticipating the Sovereign's return from France. The greater, then, was the shock occasioned by the news of the King's mishap. The town was overcast by a cloud of anxiety that any, even the slightest, misfortune should have happened to the Sovereign at a moment when he stood, as he still stands, highest in the admiration and esteem of the world and the deep-rooted affection of the Empire. The medical reports were not in any way alarming; nevertheless, they were depressing, and a universal supplication went up for a happy and speedy restoration to health and strength of our cherished King and Governor.

On Wednesday, October 27, 1915, the papers published a Reuter telegram, dated Paris, the previous day, announcing that the King and the President had visited both armies and that the latter had conferred the War Cross upon the Prince of Wales. Hitherto the departure of His Majesty for the Front had not been made known to any but the favoured few.

On the following morning the King's order of the day was announced by General Joffre and published in our papers, and the evening journals contained the disturbing news that His Majesty had fallen from his charger. Details of the accident were given in the morning papers on October 29.

Probably the gravity of the mishap was not fully realised by the public generally. Reflective people rightly regarded it with some dismay and pondered over possible consequences. The most skilful riders have lost their lives in similar circumstances. That the King's life was imperilled is undeniable. He escaped by a miracle with the minimum of injuries; these were, however, of a sufficiently serious nature to cause the greatest anxiety to those around him. Although bulletins were not issued after November 6, it was not until December 1 that His Majesty could be driven out.

THE BULLETINS

Press Bureau, 2.30 p.m.
October 28, 1915.

While the King was inspecting his Army in the Field this morning His Majesty's horse, excited by the cheers of the troops, reared and fell.

The King was severely bruised, and will be confined to bed for the present.

(Signed) Arthur Sloggett.
Anthony Bowlby.
Bertrand Dawson.
Wilmot Heringham.
Cuthbert Wallace.

October 29, 1915.

The King has had a fair night, with some sleep. The temperature is now 99·2 and pulse 75.

His Majesty's general condition has improved and no complications have arisen.

(Signed) ANTHONY BOWLBY,
BERTRAND DAWSON.

October 30.

The King's condition shows further improvement; there has been some sleep and the pain is diminishing. Temperature and pulse normal.

(Signed) ANTHONY BOWLBY.
BERTRAND DAWSON.

October 30.

The King makes slow progress. The pain is diminishing, but His Majesty is still weak. Pulse and temperature are normal.

(Signed) ANTHONY A. BOWLBY.
BERTRAND DAWSON.

Monday, November 1,
10 a.m.

The improvement in the condition of the King continues, and His Majesty has had a better night.

(Signed) ANTHONY BOWLBY.
BERTRAND DAWSON.

BUCKINGHAM PALACE,
Monday, November 1, 1915,
9.25 p.m.

The King arrived at Buckingham Palace this evening at 7.30.

Although much fatigued by the journey, His Majesty's condition is satisfactory.

(Signed) Frederick Treves.
Anthony A. Bowlby.
Bertrand Dawson.
Stanley Hewett.

[Queen Alexandra and Princess Victoria visited the King and Queen the same evening.]

Buckingham Palace,
November 2, 11.50 a.m.

The King has had a better night and has no fever.

Although the effects of the accident are slowly passing off, His Majesty will be for some time longer confined to bed.

(Signed) Frederick Treves.
Anthony A. Bowlby.
Bertrand Dawson.
Stanley Hewett.

November 6.

The King has had a better night, and was able to be moved to a couch for a few hours.

His Majesty is progressing satisfactorily, but it will be some time before he will be well enough to leave his room.

No further bulletin will be issued.

[The Press Association stated that neither Sir Anthony Bowlby nor Sir Bertrand Dawson saw the King that day, and the fact that only two medical attendants (Sir Frederick Treves and Mr. Stanley

Hewett) were responsible for the bulletin was reassuring. The progress thus made by His Majesty has exceeded expectations. The King is now able to receive certain special visitors in his room.]

This authoritative account of the King's accident and his journey to England was issued, and very rightly, on November 2:

The mishap occurred exactly as stated in the bulletins, and there is no truth in various rumours giving other accounts of the accident. The King was riding a strange horse, but an excellent one, with a military saddle and trappings. The animal, frightened by the cheering which greeted His Majesty, reared up and then fell over, its hind legs slipping from under it in consequence of the greasy state of the road.

Unfortunately it fell upon its rider, pinning him down and causing severe injury and shock, but without breaking any bones. The trouble was accentuated by having to convey the patient in a motor-car for a considerable distance. Pouring rain prevailed at the time.

In the hospital train on the other side His Majesty, though lying helpless in bed, pluckily determined personally to invest a soldier with the V.C. The soldier was Lance-Sergeant Oliver Brooks, of the Coldstream Guards, who won his decoration on October 8.

The new V.C. was conducted to the hospital train at——, and was taken to the side of the bed on which the King was lying. He knelt on the floor of the saloon and bent over His Majesty. Even so, the King found that he had overrated his strength and could not manage to get the pin through the thick khaki. Assistance had to be given before the ceremony could be completed.

The King crossed the Channel in the hospital ship *Anglia*,* on board of which there were also about fifty wounded and otherwise invalided soldiers, and, although the crossing was very rough, suffered less fatigue than the circumstances led his advisers to expect, and after reaching home had the best night's rest experienced since his accident. The journey up from the coast was made in the ambulance train "Queen Mary," furnished by Lady Michelham.

His Majesty had to be conveyed from Victoria to Buckingham Palace on a stretcher placed in an ambulance, and the bearer party from the train to the vehicle, and from the ambulance to the Palace, was composed of a specially selected party of men belonging to the British Red Cross Society, Number 1 (London) Detachment.

The King was lifted out of bed and placed on the stretcher with the utmost gentleness and care, and then carried to the ambulance. The ambulance, a new one never used before, was presented by the ladies of Burma, and bore the inscription, "No. 1, Burma." It was presented to the British Red Cross Society by those ladies, and was attended by a British surgeon, an English nursing sister, and a nurse from the Dominion of Canada. The English nurse was Sister Edith Ward, and the Canadian

---

* *This hospital vessel was torpedoed in the Channel not long afterwards!* Some of the wounded and invalided men whom the *Anglia* was bringing to England were rescued, but there was a sad loss of life.

Vivienne Tremaine, and, although they were selected quite fortuitously, by a coincidence Sister Ward was the nurse who attended King George during his attack of typhoid.

So painful had been His Majesty's injuries that the car started off at only eight miles an hour, and was promptly dropped to dead slow. The latter part of the journey was made at a pace of only about three miles an hour, and even so the patient was considerably shaken.

A French witness of the scene thus described an episode of the King's visit to the Front which had such a deplorable ending: "Yesterday, at three in the afternoon, ten motor-cars from the Great Headquarters drew up in a little village two miles from S——. From the first King George alighted, accompanied by President Poincaré, from the second General Joffre and a very youthful lieutenant in khaki, full of health and good spirits. It was the Prince of Wales. Two Generals awaited the King and the President at the roadside. After a few hurried greetings the party walked to an observation station. The King and the President left at five o'clock. His Majesty's visit to the Front produced an excellent impression. It was simple and cordial. The King wished to see for himself something of the spirit of the French Army. Wherever he went he was able to see that, like the British, our troops cheerfully and confidently face the winter campaign which is beginning. The French soldiers were glad to have the opportunity of manifesting their esteem for the Prince of Wales, whose pluck they have long admired."

During this visit to the Front His Majesty was recognised in the main square of a town by a woman tram-conductor, who shouted "Vive le Roi!" A crowd quickly gathered around the Royal motor-car with loud cries of "Vive le Roi!" "Vive l'Angleterre!" and many hurrahs. As His Majesty was leaving an ambulance station a number of children came to him bringing quantities of flowers, and one little girl, her arms filled with an enormous bouquet of flowers, gathered from the gardens of the neighbourhood, summoned up sufficient courage to falter a few words of compliment. "We are very fond of England," she said, "especially since we have been learning English." His Majesty, with an amused smile, questioned the child, who explained to him that some British wounded and convalescent at the neighbouring hospital had come to an arrangement with the children to try to teach them English in return for picking up some French from them. The King concluded his visit at five o'clock, when he left after expressing his grateful appreciation of the work of officers and men alike.

There is a garden in Pall Mall where floats a Queen's flag, her own flag by prescriptive right, and there is a garden, not precisely in, but still of, the Mall, high-walled in and bounded by noble trees, a sacred enclosure, the extent of which, really some two score acres, is vaguely guessed at by all who compose the "outsides" of the public conveyances plying between the "Corner" and "Victoria." And in this garden, which was planned by one Jenkins, a famous layer-out of such pleasaunces, "there might have been seen," as the romancer of the Victorian period would have written on that sad closing day of November, 1915, an Illustrious Personage taking his little pleasure-outing somewhat sadly in a Bath chair.

No matter what the weather or what the modest vehicle in which the King made the round of his own garden, he enjoyed it scarcely less than his subjects enjoy their canters in the "Route du Roi"; for it was His Majesty's first appearance in the "open" since his grievous mishap in France. If you have haply had the pleasure of gazing up at, or even on occasion strolling in, these forty-acre pleasure gardens, you will have carried away a delightful mind-picture of velvety turf, venerable trees, variegated blossoms, the Queen's summer-house, and a lake some half-dozen acres in extent, Guests of their Majesties may, if they are fortunate, find themselves, but not in November or December, seated in a Royal "barge," rowed by a Royal bargeman, apparelled in Royal scarlet, and made further decorative by a breastplate of gleaming brass bearing the insignia of the Royal House. When you are in the garden, and only then, do you get a view of the "front" of Buckingham Palace; it is the "back" of the Sovereign's London house that you see from the Mall.

The King's first appearance in public after his accident in the last week of October was, then, on December 1, Queen Alexandra's birthday, when His Majesty, accompanied by his consort, drove to Marlborough House and dined with his mother. The King and Queen spent Christmas at Sandringham. His Majesty came to London for a few hours on December 27 to confer with the Premier. All outward traces of the mishap had by this time disappeared, and in his walk there was no limping. "He is all right again now," said those who saw him on the platform at Paddington; "but he has had a nasty time"—a much worse time than the public imagined.

The King, it may be here noted, has not always been in perfect health. In November, 1891, he was struck down by typhoid fever, a malady which twenty years before had nearly deprived Queen Victoria of her eldest son and the nation of the most popular of Heirs-Apparent. The young Prince was in so serious a condition that his mother and her daughters hurried home from Russia, where, at romantic and picturesque Livadia, they were staying with the late Emperor Alexander III and his Consort when they were urgently summoned to England. But for this untoward event, the then Princess of Wales and the three young ladies would have accompanied the King and Queen of Denmark from Livadia to Gmünden on a visit to Princess Thyra, Duchess of Cumberland, after passing a few days with the Tsar and Tsaritsa at St. Petersburg and at that sylvan retreat, Gatchina, which you can imagine you see from the railway.

The pessimistic view taken by the Prince of Wales and others of Prince George's illness unhappily proved to have been more than justified. The medical journals had published particularly guarded statements of the condition of the sufferer. The "dailies" circulated a semi-official note, pointing out that "no notice" should be taken by the public of anything published except the doctors' bulletins, "which" (so it was declared) were "most carefully written." An ultimate, but not a speedy, recovery was anticipated—so the medicos in attendance asserted. In the emergency the Prince of Wales showed the sterling stuff he was made of. He watched by his youngest son's bedside most devotedly, leaving Marlborough House only on rare occasions. For some days it was a struggle for life, and the complete recovery was of the slowest.

The King's devotion to his mother is not too well known even in London; in the provinces their beautiful—some say the spiritual—affection for each other is scarcely realisable. When distance separates them, we are told that His Majesty writes daily to Queen Alexandra; although this may be a pardonable exaggeration of the fact. Those who mendaciously assert that similar relations have not always existed between the two Queens are either singularly ill-informed, or not informed at all. The truth is that the harmony uniting parents and children is complete, and seldom, if ever, disturbed.

I have heard that, in the evening, in the first period of the war, the King was frequently seen strolling along the Mall discussing the general situation with leading naval officers. There were references to charts showing where every British warship was at the moment. The story recalled to me September, 1870, when, after Sedan, the Germans were marching on Paris, and when every night Moltke received precise information of the exact position at the moment of the 200,000 future beleaguerers of the doomed capital, which, in 1914, our heroes and those of our Ally saved from a second " occupation " by the barbarians, who were within twenty-five miles of Paris when they were routed.

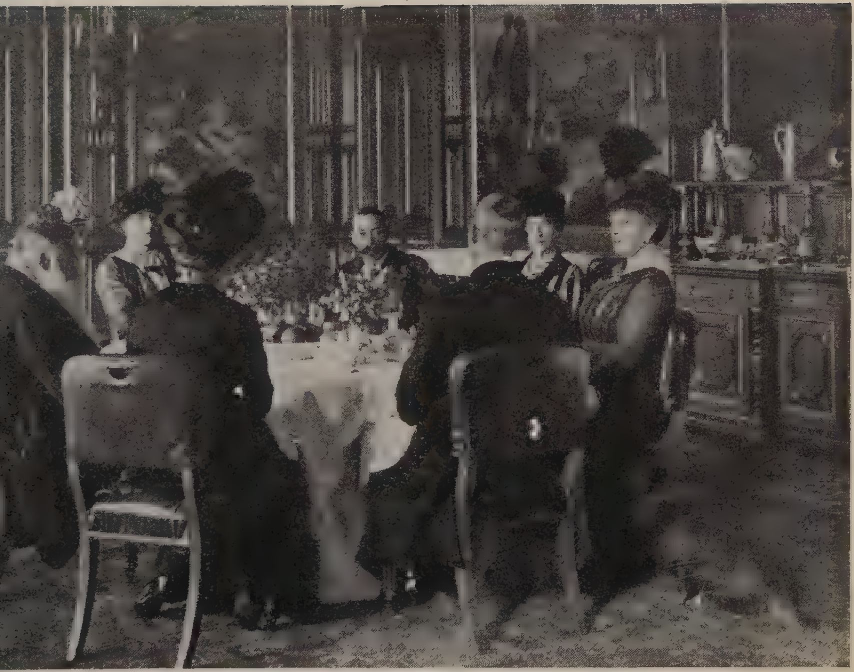


Photo F. Ralph

A Luncheon Party at Sandringham
(The King and Queen, Queen Alexandra, Princess Mary, the Hon.
Charlotte Knollys, Sir Dighton Probyn)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

M. Eugène Réveilland is not only a French Senator, but a poet, who has written a new version of the "Marseillaise," with Rouget de l'Isle's famous words "adapted to present conditions;" and also "The Te Deum of the Brother Nations," which can be sung to the air of our "God Save the King." One verse runs:

Bénis les peuples frères:
George, Roi d'Angleterre,
Bon fils d'Edouard:
Ecosse avec Irlande,
Galles avec Highlande:
Contre l'aigle Allemande,
Le léopard.

Children who in these war-days are beginning to learn French may like to have the verse in English:

[God] bless the brother nations:
George, King of England,
Good son of Edward:
Scotland with Ireland,
Wales with the Highlands:
Against the German eagle,
The leopard.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER X

THE KING'S OWN WORDS

Selected Addresses and Messages

The Royal House

The King Changes its Name

This official announcement appeared on July 17, 1917:

"The King has convened a special meeting of the Privy Council for to-day with the object of carrying out the intention, which His Majesty has already expressed, of changing the name of the Royal House. The new name will be announced in due course by Royal Proclamation."

The King and Food Economy

The country was greatly stirred by the publication on the 2nd and 3rd of May, 1917, of the subjoined Royal Proclamation:[*]

BY THE KING

A PROCLAMATION—GEORGE, R.I.

WE, being persuaded that the abstention from all unnecessary consumption of grain will furnish the surest and most effectual means of defeating the devices of our enemies, and thereby bringing the war to a speedy and successful termination, and out of our resolve to leave nothing undone which can contribute to these ends or to the welfare of our people in these times of grave stress and anxiety, have thought fit by and with the advice of our Privy Council to issue this our Royal Proclamation, most earnestly exhorting and charging all those of our loving subjects, the men and women of our Realm who have the means to procure articles of food other than wheat and corn, as they tender their immediate interests and feel for the want of others, especially to practise the greatest economy and frugality in the use of every species of grain and wheat.

---

[*] *Vide* chap. ii, vol. ii.

AND we do for this purpose more particularly exhort and charge all heads of households to reduce the consumption of bread in their respective families by at least one-fourth of the quantity consumed in ordinary times, to abstain from the use of flour in pastry, and, moreover, carefully to restrict, or wherever possible to abandon, the use thereof in all other articles than bread.

AND we do also in like manner exhort and charge all persons who keep horses to abandon the practice of feeding the same with oats or other grain, unless they shall have received from our Food Controller a licence to feed horses on oats or other grain to be given only in cases where it is necessary to do so with a view to maintain the breed of horses in the national interest.

AND we do hereby further charge and enjoin all ministers of religion in their respective churches and chapels within Our United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland to read or cause to be read this Our Proclamation on the Lord's Day for four successive weeks after the issue thereof.

Given at Our Court of Buckingham Palace this second day of May in the year of Our Lord 1917, and in the seventh year of our reign.

GOD SAVE THE KING.

On the day of the publication of this historic document Sir Derek Keppel, Master of the Royal Household, said: "The King would never ask and has never asked his people to make sacrifices in which he is unprepared to share. He will do consistently what he asks the general public to do, and, what is more to the point, he has already done and is still doing it. We are all on strict rations here and have been since the beginning of February."

THE IMPERIAL WAR CONFERENCE

On May 3, 1917, His Majesty received the members of the Imperial War Conference at Windsor Castle, the Queen, Princess Mary, and the Princes Albert, Henry, and George being present. An address was read by the Prime Minister of Canada (Sir Robert Borden).

The KING said:

You have met at an historic moment in our Empire's story. I am confident that the result of your deliberations will be of great and lasting advantage, not only in helping to bring the present war to a victorious conclusion, but to ensure that when peace is restored we may be found prepared for the tasks which then await us in the organisation of the resources of the Empire with a view of rendering it more self-sustaining, and in strengthening the ties that knit together all parts of my Dominions.

It has afforded me the utmost satisfaction that representatives of India have been members of your Conference with equal rights to take part in its deliberations. This meeting round a common board will result in the increasing growth of a spirit of larger sympathy and of mutual understanding between India and the Overseas Dominions.

Your present gathering is a giant stride on the road of progress and Imperial development, and I feel sure that this advance will be steadily continued.

I deeply regret that, owing to unavoidable circumstances, it has not been possible for the Commonwealth of Australia to be represented at the present Conference. But that great Dominion stands second to none in determination to do all in its power to assist in the tremendous conflict in which the Empire is engaged.

In the present terrible struggle the magnificent contributions in men, munitions, and money made by all parts of my Empire have been a source of the greatest pride and satisfaction to me.

It is fitting also that I should here specially refer to the magnificent gifts of money made towards the expenses of the war by the Government, princes, and peoples of India.

May this comradeship in the field, this community of suffering and sacrifice draw together still closer than ever all parts of my possessions, establishing fresh bonds of union that will endure to our mutual advantage long after the war and its horrors have passed away.

I rejoice in the prospect of better means of communication, which will more effectively link up the various portions of my Empire, and I trust that the days to come will see an ever-increasing exchange of visits and personal intercourse between the Mother Country and the Overseas Dominions.

The value of Empire lies not in its greatness and strength alone, but in the several contributions that each of its diverse parts, with their varying circumstances and conditions, makes to the one general stock of knowledge and progress.

At Aldershot

On May 16, 1912, the Sovereigns were at Aldershot watching the troops at work. The King was well mounted, and the Queen followed him by auto and on foot. Presenting new colours to the 2nd Scots Guards, 1st Dorset Regiment, and 1st Loyal North Lancashire, His Majesty said:

> Though no longer carried into action the colours are still the pivot round which the whole life of a regiment moves, for they are a sacred symbol of its honour and prestige, to uphold which is a precious trust shared by all ranks. I ask, and whether in peace or war I feel sure you will display, the same proud, strenuous effort to uphold your colours untarnished as in those days gone by, when lives were cheerfully and readily given in carrying and keeping them in the forefront of the battle.
>
> And if ever the time should come that you should be called upon to fight for your country's cause, I know that you and more to come after you will add fresh lustre to the colours which I have now entrusted to your keeping.

THE KING AND QUEEN VISIT THE KAISER (1913) FOR THE LAST TIME

In the late spring of 1913 King George and the Queen journeyed to Berlin for the wedding of Princess Victoria Louise (only daughter of the Emperor and Empress) and Prince Ernest Augustus (son of the Duke of Cumberland, a brother-in-law of Queen Alexandra). In the drawing-room of the British Embassy, the King and Queen received (May 23) a deputation of nine persons, who represented the hundreds of British subjects residing in what is called "greater" Berlin. Acknowledging their loyal address, the King said:

> We are especially pleased that we are the guests of the Sovereign of this great and friendly nation in order to celebrate the union of two young lives, which we earnestly pray may be fraught with all possible blessing. I am interested to find so many different races of my subjects enjoying the hospitality and advantages of citizenship in Berlin.
>
> By fostering and maintaining kindly relations and good understanding between yourselves and the people of this your adopted home you are helping to ensure the peace of the world, the preservation of which is my fervent desire, as it was the chief aim and object of my dear father's life.

MESSAGE TO TROOPS AT ALDERSHOT

On May 14, 1913, their Majesties brought their visit to Aldershot to a close, and this message from the King to the troops was issued:

> On the conclusion of my visit, I wish to express my satisfaction with the energy and progress which characterized the whole life of the Aldershot command.
>
> I was glad to find a marked development in the work and administration of the Royal Flying Corps, and what courage and *esprit de corps* animate all ranks of this newly formed arm.
>
> The display by the 5th Dragoon Guards was an interesting

example of the improved training of recruits and horses throughout the cavalry, which, I understand, is largely due to the system in force at the cavalry school.

It was gratifying to see the keen manner in which the Territorials were carrying out their training under somewhat unfavourable weather conditions, and to realise that officers and men were giving up their short holiday to make themselves efficient members of our citizen army.

In the Officers' Gymkhana Club and the recent great increase of recreation ground for the men, I recognize that physical exercises and sport are not overlooked as essential factors in the training of soldiers.

The Queen and I always enjoy passing a few days in the camp, and it is especially satisfactory to me that I have these opportunities of seeing the different arms of the service at their ordinary daily training.

ROYAL PLANS CANCELLED

Official *communiqué*, March 23, 1914 :

In order that the King may be in close communication with his Ministers at the present time, it has been decided to alter their Majesties' plans for this week, which included a visit to the Earl and Countess of Derby from Tuesday to Saturday.

Their Majesties being anxious not to cause disappointment by cancelling the arrangements made for Wednesday, including visits to Chester, Port Sunlight, Birkenhead, and Wallasey, have settled to carry out this part of the programme, and to return to London by an early train on Thursday morning.

[The change in their Majesties' arrangements meant the cancellation of the following fixtures :

Thursday.—Visit to Aintree races.

Friday (Grand National day).—Visit to the races and drive round the course during the hour before the Grand National.

The King on two previous occasions had been prevented from witnessing the Grand National, at which he has never been present since he came to the Throne. In 1913 the death of the King of Greece, and in 1912 the coal strike compelled him to cancel his engagements to be present at the race.]

THE BRITISH MUSEUM

On May 7, 1914, the King, who was accompanied by the Queen and Princess Mary, opened the King Edward VII's galleries at the British Museum. The cost of the new wing and the site was about £400,000. The Archbishop of Canterbury addressed the King, who replied as follows:

> It is with peculiar pleasure that the Queen and I have come here to-day to open this important addition to the British Museum, which is to bear the name of my dear father. You have told in your address the remarkable story of the growth of the museum, and as a former trustee of this great national institution I feel legitimate pride not only in its past history but in the scheme now happily completed to meet its greater future needs.
>
> The objects of the foundation of the museum have been abundantly realised. It was founded not only for the advancement and improvement of discoveries in natural philosophy and other branches of speculative knowledge, but also for the general use and benefit of the public. The large number of students and visitors who come within these walls each year bear testimony to the useful part which the institution plays in the national life, and the many foreigners from all parts of the world who take advantage of the facilities the museum offers justify its claim to rank among the greatest institutions of its kind.
>
> The museum has always received, and will, I am sure, continue to receive, the generous support of the Government. But it has also profited to a remarkable degree by the public-

spirited liberality of many generations of individual benefactors, to whom the nation owes a debt of gratitude. The new galleries which we are met to open to-day form a worthy addition to one of the noblest public buildings of my capital.

They will enable your ever-growing collections to be displayed to more advantage, and will provide better accommodation for students and for the work of the staff, and will thus, I trust, extend and enhance the influence of the museum as one of the chief educational agencies of the world.

I accept with pleasure the beautiful album illustrating the architectural developments of the museum. I desire to assure you of my strong personal interest in the work and development of the museum, which will, I am confident, ever maintain the traditions of a great past, and will go forward to a future of even wider usefulness.

THE KING AND PRESIDENT POINCARÉ

One of the most happily conceived speeches made by King George was that which he delivered (June 24, 1913) at the State banquet given in honour of President Poincaré at Buckingham Palace. Speaking in French HIS MAJESTY said:

It affords me, Monsieur le Président, the greatest pleasure to offer you a hearty welcome to this country and to express my high appreciation of your courtesy in paying me a visit so soon after your installation in your present eminent and exalted position.

The intercourse for so many centuries between our two countries, such near neighbours as they are, has enabled each of them to profit alike by the intellectual culture and material prosperity of the other. The result has been a steady growth of deep mutual respect and goodwill. Since the signature in 1904 of the diplomatic instruments that settled so amicably the outstanding questions between us, the two nations have been enabled to co-operate harmoniously and cordially in matters of international concern, and have been drawn together by a growing sense of unity of interest and identity of purpose.

The aim which both our Governments has kept constantly in view is the cause of peace, and the chief of our common interests lies in a close co-operation for that blessed purpose.

During the past months, when a succession of grave international questions arose one after the other, the spirit of mutual confidence and frankness with which the Governments of France and Great Britain were enabled to approach the various problems that presented themselves has proved to be of inestimable advantage : and in the treatment of the serious issues with which Europe was confronted it is a source of the highest satisfaction to us to reflect that all the Great Powers concerned have consulted together and worked for peace.

I esteem myself especially fortunate in having as my guest a statesman of such high repute and of such distinguished services, whose name is not only prominent among public men but has also a place in that famous academy which has for so many ages been the glory of France and the envy of Europe.

I also wish to convey to you, Monsieur le Président, my warm appreciation of the words, as graceful as they were eloquent, in which on two occasions last year you made known your respect and esteem for my illustrious predecessors, Queen Victoria and my ever-beloved father. I can assure you, Monsieur le Président, that they move me deeply, and will be a lasting treasure in my memory.

I raise my glass to wish you, Monsieur le Président, every possible happiness and prosperity and also to express my sincerest hope that the great nation of France will have a glorious future, and that the relations between our two countries may continue in unimpaired intimacy and vitality.

M. Poincaré thus replied, also in French :

Sire,—The hearty welcome which your Majesty has been good enough to accord me, the lavish tokens of sympathy shown to me since my arrival by the Royal Government, the enthusiasm with which the people of London have honoured the representative of France, will excite among my fellow-countrymen a general sentiment of joy and gratitude.

In seizing with gratitude the opportunity which your Majesty has so kindly afforded me of paying you a visit this year, I desire to give at the same time a proof of my personal sentiments and to bring to the great British nation the loyal remembrance of my country.

In order to interpret French opinion this evening I have only to recall the striking demonstrations which I have frequently witnessed ; as, for instance, last year on the shores of the Mediterranean, when during the solemnities which your Majesty, doubtless, has not forgotten, an enthusiastic crowd hailed the gallant bearing of the Royal crews ; or again, as yesterday, when, on my departure from France, Normandy, trembling with emotion, multiplied her cheers for England.

The friendship which unites the two countries to-day is both on the one side and on the other deeply implanted in the mind of the populace.

History and time will themselves develop it. In embryo it lay in the traditional goodwill which the centuries have developed between Great Britain and France, and which was not allowed to increase until contrary sentiments passed away.

The day has arrived when there have been happily settled questions which seemed to place in contradiction in several parts of the world our respective interests. The two peoples have at last yielded to their natural disposition, their mutual respect has little by little increased to affection, and to the courtesy of their ancient relations a trustful intimacy has been easily joined. During the grave events which have followed one another for some months, which have held the attention on the alert for so long, and which still cause serious preoccupation, our two Governments have been able to appreciate throughout the blessings of an understanding which has enabled them to establish between them constant collaboration, to study with complete agreement the problems presented, and to devise easily in concert desirable solutions.

In this daily co-operation they have not ceased to work so as to prevent the extension or the renewal of hostilities and to prevent between the Great Powers conflicts of which the consequences would have been incalculable.

Like England, France has had the happiness of working in the cause of peace with the perpetual co-operation of all the Chancelleries, and she will continue with the same goodwill to labour so that the harmony of which Europe has given the salutary example shall not be disturbed in the future.

I raise my glass in honour of your Majesty, of

Her Majesty the Queen, who has received me with so much graciousness, of Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, and of His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, whom it has been very agreeable to me to see again in Paris this year, and of all the Royal Family.

I drink to the prosperity and to the greatness of the United Kingdom.

KING AND SULTAN

In October 1913, less than a year before the two countries were at war, Sir Lucas Mallet, the new British Ambassador, in presenting his credentials to the Sultan, made a speech of a remarkably friendly tenor.

> I do not think [said his Excellency] there is any need for me to declare that in fulfilling the important mission with which the King has graciously deigned to entrust me I shall have only one aim in view—to maintain and strengthen the relations of cordial friendship which so happily exist between our two countries. I undertake that task at a singularly propitious moment—at a moment when the negotiations in London have found a happy solution in the spirit of reciprocal conciliation which offers the best guarantee for the early strengthening of the ties which unite the two countries.
>
> The King, my august master, has charged me with being the interpreter to your Majesty of his sincere friendship and of the unalterable goodwill with which he is animated towards your Majesty as well as towards the Empire over whose destinies your Majesty presides so worthily. The King expresses the hope to see consolidated and developed, under the same high auspices, the resources of Turkey, both material and moral.

The SULTAN replied:

> Your Excellency may be persuaded that you will find both with me and my Government the most sincere support in the accomplishment of your high mission and an equal desire to

strengthen the traditional relations of friendship existing so happily between the two countries, which have found a new and solid basis in the results of the recent negotiations between the two Governments. Highly appreciating the sincere sentiments of friendship and the expressions of goodwill which the King instructs you to communicate, I beg you to express to him my sincere thanks and to convey to him my inalterable friendship for his august person himself, and my most cordial wishes for the welfare of his illustrious dynasty and the prosperity of his Empire.

THE KING AND QUEEN OF DENMARK IN LONDON

At the State banquet at Buckingham Palace on May 9, 1914, in honour of the Danish Sovereigns, KING GEORGE welcomed King Christian in these words:

SIRE,—I rejoice that it has been possible for your Majesty, accompanied by Her Majesty Queen Alexandrine, to visit this country, and the Queen joins with me in offering you both a most hearty welcome. Our sentiments are, believe me, shared by all classes of my people.

The relations between our two countries have long been of the friendliest character. My earnest hope is that they may ever so continue.

More than fifty years have elapsed since my dear mother first landed on these shores amidst those expressions of love and devotion which time has only strengthened. The family alliance then inaugurated has united the two peoples in close friendship.

I am happy to think that with time and increased facilities of transit the commercial and social intercourse between your Majesty's country and these islands is steadily developing.

These intimate associations cannot fail to further the good understanding between us.

The inhabitants of this capital will welcome the opportunity of displaying their esteem and affection towards the Royal House of Denmark.

I raise my glass to the health of your Majesty and of Queen Alexandrine, and I desire to express my heartfelt wishes for a long and happy life to your Majesties and your family, and for the continued prosperity and welfare of the Danish nation.

The KING OF DENMARK replied as follows:

SIRE,—On the Queen's and my own behalf I beg to express to your Majesty our heartfelt thanks for the very kind words with which your Majesty has been kind enough to welcome us in London. I deeply regret that a deplorable demise in your Majesty's family circle has thrown a feeling of sadness over these days.

We are both extremely glad to be your Majesty's guests and appreciate highly the splendid reception which has been given us here from the moment we landed on British soil, which will be highly esteemed in my own country. The Danish nation and I keep in grateful memory the many proofs of sympathy shown me, my family, and Denmark on the sad occasion of my beloved father's death.

At the same time, I remember with gratitude the kindness which was shown me during my former visit here not only by your Majesties but also by King Edward and Queen Alexandra. Valuable remembrances for me are also connected with Marlborough House and Sandringham. I avail myself of this opportunity to thank your Majesty for having conferred on me the great honour of making me a Knight of the Garter.

The ties of friendship which bind Denmark and the British Empire together are not only due to the intimate relations of kinship between our families. The close commercial intercourse which exists between the Danish and British nations has also drawn our people together in common work for peace and progress, and I sincerely hope that our visit to this country will tend to draw still closer these bonds of traditional friendship which unite our two nations.

I raise my glass and drink to the health of His Majesty the King, Her Majesty Queen Mary, Her Majesty Queen Alexandra, His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, and the Royal Family, and to the prosperity of the great British nation.

AT HULL

The provincial tour of their Majesties in 1914 was concluded at Hull by their opening of the new dock and the laying of the foundation-stone of the Municipal Sanatorium and Hospital, the Queen performing a similar office for the Municipal Secondary School for Girls—all this on June 26. His Majesty made these speeches:

> The Queen and I have accepted with much pleasure the invitation to be present at to-day's ceremony, when I open the new dock of the Joint Committee of the North-Eastern and the Hull and Barnsley Railway Companies, and we thank you heartily for the loyal and dutiful address which you have presented on their behalf. The welfare of this country has for long been bound up with the prosperity of its sea-borne trade, and I follow with close interest the never-ceasing progress and development of our ports and of the great merchant navy

on which our commerce depends. It was therefore a deep satisfaction to me to know that the rapid growth in recent years of the trade of Hull with all parts of the world and the increasing number of vessels that enter and leave this port have impelled you to increase your shipping facilities, and I congratulate you warmly on the successful accomplishment of your task by the addition of this magnificent dock to the resources of your port.

I am glad to be with you to-day on an occasion of such good omen, not only for the development of the City and the surrounding district, but also for the strengthening of the peaceful ties which link our land to the Dominions beyond the seas and to the great nations of the world.

We thank you for your good wishes and we look forward with every confidence to the further extension of your useful labours and of the prosperity of your City.

It has given the Queen and myself the greatest pleasure to revisit your ancient city, and we thank you very sincerely for your loyal and kind welcome. We well remember our visit in 1903, and we are glad to learn that, aided by geographical position, Hull has continued to grow in size and prosperity and to develop still further oversea trade, to the great advantage of the great industrial district of the North and of the country generally. The new dock which I have come to inaugurate to-day will, I trust, mark the beginning of a period of still greater prosperity, and I congratulate you on the happy necessity which has required this extension of your commercial facilities.

I consented very readily to lay the foundation-stone of your new sanatorium and school for girls. The Queen and I feel especial interest in every measure which has for its object to relieve suffering or promote the well-being of the community. The labour which you have expended in these causes will be richly repaid, and I wish a successful future to your new institution. Your city's high position on the roll of the great ports of my kingdom has justified me in complying with the application which has been made to me, and I have very great pleasure in declaring that henceforth the chief magistrates and officers of the city should bear the style and title of Lord Mayor of Kingston-upon-Hull.

To the Mayor of Chester

From the King's Equerry (March 26, 1914):

> I am commanded to make known to you with what pleasure the King and Queen visited Chester, and to congratulate you upon the successful manner in which all the arrangements were carried out.
>
> Their Majesties were much gratified with the enthusiastic reception accorded to them by the people of your beautiful and ancient city as they drove through the streets, and were impressed with the spontaneity with which all classes had united to display their loyalty and goodwill.

Royal Tour in Scotland

The date of this tour was July, 1914. At Dundee (July 10), where, it was reported, an "amazing and overpowering" ovation was given their Majesties and Princess Mary, the King, replying to an address from the Corporation, said:

> I thank you heartily on behalf of the Queen and myself for the warmth and loyalty of your welcome to us on our visit to the Royal borough of Dundee. I am pleased to renew and strengthen the ties founded by my revered grandmother Queen Victoria and my beloved mother Queen Alexandra, and I assure you that my affection for the Kingdom of Scotland is no less than theirs. In visiting this place, which by its commerce and industry adds to the wealth and greatness of my dominions, I am rejoiced to see that this great port and ancient city, which is so renowned in history, maintains by the arts of peace the high position it has long held and so justly deserves. The Queen and I are deeply moved by your prayers for our welfare, and I trust that you will be blessed with that prosperity which is the reward of those virtues which your city motto aptly names "Prudence and sincerity."

The same night the Lord Provost of Dundee received this telegram from the King's Equerry in Waiting:

I am commanded by the King once more to express to you, and through you to the people of Dundee, the thanks of the King and Queen for the splendid and loyal welcome extended to their Majesties to-day. The fine weather completed the success of your carefully prepared programme, and the King and Queen will ever remember with feelings of gratitude and affection their first visit to Dundee.

At Perth, after receiving an address, His Majesty replied:

It is with great pleasure that the Queen and I receive the loyal and dutiful address presented to us by the Lord Provost, magistrates, and councillors of this our city and Royal borough of Perth. It affords me much satisfaction to visit this beautiful part of Scotland, and especially this ancient and renowned city, and I recall with interest its historic connections with my Throne, and the fact that in former times it was the seat of Government of the country. The occasion of my present visit is to open the new buildings of the Royal Infirmary, and I am the more glad to come to you at a time when I can signify my approval of the efforts which are being made here and in the county to alleviate sickness and suffering. I thank you for the assurance of your affection and pray you may continue in good works and prosperity.

AT GLASGOW

At Glasgow, during this eventful Royal tour (July, 1914), the welcome to their Majesties and their daughter "struck that full loyal note which is characteristic of Scotsmen." The King made several speeches. His reply to the address of the Corporation—a document enclosed in a casket presented to His Majesty—was as follows:

The Queen and I are much gratified for the warm and loyal welcome offered to us by the Lord Provost, the magistrates, and the citizens of the great and prosperous city and Royal burgh of Glasgow.

The address to which I have listened recalls the special association of my family with your city. Seven years ago its freedom was conferred upon me, and I have followed with interest its remarkable progress in industry and commerce, in arts and letters, and in the noble works of charity. We remember with pleasure our visit to Glasgow during the reign of my august grandmother, Queen Victoria, when I opened the Prince's Dock, a notable undertaking by the city and a valuable addition to the facilities of the Clyde.

It is therefore with increased satisfaction that to-day I have come to lay the foundation-stone of the extension of the municipal buildings, the centre of the corporate life of more than a million of my subjects, whose local interests are devotedly safeguarded and administered with the enterprise and integrity which has always characterised the Corporation of Glasgow.

In thanking you most heartily for your good wishes, I earnestly trust that Glasgow will ever prosper, and maintain that high position which it now occupies among the great cities of the British Empire.'

At the Glasgow Royal Hospital for Sick Children (of which the Duke of Montrose is president) the King said:

'The sick child has a double claim on the community, and I am glad that the people in the West of Scotland have established and maintained this institution, the doors of which are open day and night to the call of the sick and the poor. Upon such work as you are doing, within your wards and in your out-patient department, depends in no small measure the future of the race, and it must be a source of pride to your city and to yourselves that this hospital, which has annually treated not less than 26,000 children, is now one of the largest in the kingdom.

The old guilds of Glasgow also presented addresses and were duly addressed, in turn, by the King, who had the busiest day of his rulership during what was fated to be the last month of peace. The eighth (!) address was read to His Majesty at the Western Infirmary, and to this the King, who showed no signs of exhaustion, made answer:

> I am deeply sensible of the benefits the infirmary confers on the people, not merely of the city, which has a population of over a million, but also in a much wider sphere, for I know you afford a ready aid to those who in the outlying parts of the Highlands and Islands could have little chance of treatment elsewhere, and at the same time the practical and theoretical instruction supplied by your learned and skilful staff equips new champions for the world-wide struggle against sickness and suffering.

At the University, Lord Rosebery, the Chancellor, presented the Principal, Sir Donald Macalister, who offered an address. The King's reply contained the words:

> I attach no small importance to the mutual relations of academic studies and the life of a great industrial city, and rejoice that the University shares in the growth of the city and fosters its moral and material progress by the application of theory to life.

To an address presented on behalf of the Glasgow Royal Infirmary the King replied:

> I am glad to continue the association which has connected my family with this noble charity. For I know the pressing claims of the sick and suffering, and how much has been done by this infirmary to comfort them, both by the relief of those treated from year to year within its walls, and by the discovery of improved methods, which have been a blessing to the world at large.

FOOTBALL DURING THE WAR

Lord Stamfordham, His Majesty's Private Secretary, to Mr. F. N. Charrington:

BUCKINGHAM PALACE,
September 5, 1914.

DEAR SIR,—The question raised in your telegram to the King of September 1 has received the careful consideration and respect which is due to any one speaking with your great experience and authority.

I gather that the Football Association are in direct communication with the War Office and that a general desire has been expressed by the Association to assist in obtaining recruits for the Army.

I understand that there may be difficulties in giving up all the matches of professional football clubs in view of contracts which have been made with players.

But the doings of the Association will be carefully followed, having regard to the King's position as its Patron.

Thanking you for your telegram, I remain, yours very faithfully,

STAMFORDHAM.

AFTER INSPECTING THE GRAND FLEET (1914)

Between July 6 and 10 (a month prior to the outbreak of war), His Majesty spent two days inspecting the Grand Fleet. Commander Sir Charles Cust, R.N., and Lieut.-Col. Clive Wigram accompanied him.

On leaving the fleet the King addressed the following message to Sir John Jellicoe:

I am delighted that I have been able to carry out a long-cherished desire to visit my Grand Fleet.

After two most interesting days spent here I leave with feelings of pride and of admiration for the splendid force which you command with the full confidence of myself and your fellow-countrymen.

I have had the pleasure of seeing the greater portion of the officers and men of the fleet.

I realise the patient and determined spirit with which you have faced long months of waiting and hoping.

I know how strong is the comradeship that links all ranks together.

Such a happy state of things convinces me that whenever the day of battle comes my Navy will add fresh triumphs to its old glorious traditions.

His Majesty received the following reply from Admiral Sir John Jellicoe:

On behalf of the officers and men of the Grand Fleet, I beg to tender your Majesty my most profound thanks for your message. Your Majesty's intimate knowledge of the feelings which permeate officers and men of the Royal Navy will enable you to appreciate the depth of their devotion, loyalty, and respectful affection, which feelings your Majesty's visit has intensified.

The memory of it will carry us through any further trials of patience that may be before us.

On my own behalf I beg to assure your Majesty of my conviction that the glorious traditions of the Navy are safe in the hands of those I have the honour to command.

(Signed) J. R. Jellicoe,
Admiral.

To the Earl of Powis

After His Majesty's visit to the Royal Agricultural Show at Shrewsbury in 1914, Lord Powis, President of the Royal Agricultural Society of England, received this letter:

Buckingham Palace.

Dear Lord Powis,—I am commanded by the King once more to thank you and your colleagues for the carefully planned and well carried out arrangements in connection with his visit to the Royal Agricultural Show, and also to offer his congratulations on the high standard of excellence in the exhibits of live stock, implements, and produce of the country.

His Majesty was very glad to learn that this year the aggregate number of entries is the largest in the annals of the Society, with the exception of the Society's Jubilee Show, held in Windsor Great Park in 1889, under the Presidency of Queen Victoria, and the King recognises that every effort is being made to promote the study of the scientific and practical problems of modern farming.

At the same time the annual shows not only encourage a keen and healthy competition among stock owners and farmers, but also provide a happy meeting ground for a general exchange of ideas on agricultural topics.

It was a great pleasure to His Majesty to receive so cordial a welcome from the farmers and the public attending the exhibition, and I am to assure you that His Majesty takes, as ever, the keenest interest in this present summer show.

Yours very truly,

CLIVE WIGRAM.

TO "MY SELF-GOVERNING DOMINIONS"

Early in September 1914 (the second month of the war) the King addressed this message to the Governments and peoples of his self-governing Dominions:

To the Governments and Peoples of My Self-Governing Dominions.

During the past few weeks the peoples of My whole Empire at Home and Overseas have moved with one mind and purpose to confront and overthrow an unparalleled assault upon the continuity of civilisation and the peace of mankind.

The calamitous conflict is not of My seeking, My voice has been cast throughout on the side of peace. My Ministers earnestly strove to allay the causes of strife and to appease differences with which My Empire was not concerned. Had I stood aside when, in defiance of pledges to which My Kingdom was a party, the soil of Belgium was violated and her cities laid desolate, when the very life of the French nation was threatened with extinction, I should have sacrificed My honour and given to destruction the liberties of My Empire and of mankind. I rejoice that every part of the Empire is with me in this decision.

Paramount regard for treaty faith and the pledged word of rulers and peoples is the common heritage of Great Britain and of the Empire.

My peoples in the Self-governing Dominions have shown beyond all doubt that they wholeheartedly endorse the grave decision which it was necessary to take.

My personal knowledge of the loyalty and devotion of My Oversea Dominions had led me to expect that they would cheerfully make the great efforts and bear the great sacrifices which the present conflict entails. The full measure in which they have placed their services and resources at My disposal fills me with gratitude, and I am proud to be able to show to the world that My Peoples Oversea are as determined as the People of the United Kingdom to prosecute a just cause to a successful end.

The Dominion of Canada, the Commonwealth of Australia, and the Dominion of New Zealand have placed at My disposal their naval forces, which have already rendered good service for the Empire. Strong Expeditionary forces are being prepared in Canada, in Australia, and in New Zealand for service at the Front, and the Union of South Africa has released all British troops and has undertaken important military responsibilities the discharge of which will be of the utmost value to the Empire.

Newfoundland has doubled the numbers of its branch of the Royal Naval Reserve and is sending a body of men to take part in the operations at the Front. From the Dominion and Provincial Governments of Canada large and welcome gifts of supplies are on their way for the use both of My Naval and Military Forces and for the relief of the distress in the United Kingdom which must inevitably follow in the wake of war. All parts of My Oversea Dominions have thus demonstrated in the most unmistakable manner the fundamental unity of the Empire amidst all its diversity of situation and circumstance.

To "My Indian Empire"

The King-Emperor at the same time sent a message to the Princes and Peoples of India. The first part is in the same terms as the message to the Dominions, and it concludes as follows:

To the Princes and Peoples of My Indian Empire.

Among the many incidents that have marked the unanimous uprising of the populations of My Empire in defence of its unity and integrity, nothing has moved me more than the passionate devotion to My Throne expressed both by My Indian subjects and by the Feudatory Princes and the Ruling Chiefs of India, and their prodigal offers of their lives and their resources in the cause of the Realm. Their one-voiced demand to be foremost in the conflict has touched My heart, and has inspired to the highest issues the love and devotion which, as I well know, have ever linked My Indian subjects and Myself. I recall to mind India's gracious message to the British nation of goodwill and fellowship which greeted My return in February, 1912, after the solemn ceremony of My Coronation Durbar at Delhi, and I find in this hour of trial a full harvest and a noble fulfilment of the assurance given by you that the destinies of Great Britain and India are indissolubly linked.

FIFTH VISIT TO ALDERSHOT (1914)

ROYAL PAVILION, ALDERSHOT, *May* 21, 1914.

It has been a great pleasure to the Queen and myself again to visit Aldershot for the fifth time since my accession, and to be accompanied on this occasion by the Secretary of State for War, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, and the Adjutant-General.

I wish to express my satisfaction with the consistent progress in the practical training and tests of the troops under your command, and with the keen co-operation with which all ranks work for efficiency.

It was evident to me what order and method govern the working of departments concerned with barracks, supply, transport, mobilisation, stores, physical training, and the care of sick men and horses.

I am glad to note the steady development of the Royal Aircraft Factory and of the equipment of the Royal Flying Corps, and I am confident that by inspection and research everything possible is being done to minimise the perils of flying and to decrease the number of lamentable accidents to gallant officers and men.

The equitation of the men and the training of the horses of the 1st Cavalry Brigade impressed me with the successful results of modern methods of instruction, and with the general improvement in stable management throughout the mounted branches. In the Cavalry Club and in the new Soldiers' Club at Bordon I appreciate the efforts that are being made to brighten and to widen barrack life to the soldier.

The Queen and I always look forward to our visit to Aldershot, and I welcome these opportunities of becoming more closely acquainted with the life and training of my Army.

GEORGE R.I.

THE CHURCH ARMY

Early in 1914 Prebendary Carlile submitted to His Majesty an account of the work of the Church Army. The King, who takes much interest in this valuable organisation, said :

I rejoice to hear of the reduction in the number of prisoners and vagrants throughout the country, and doubt not that the Church Army and the other voluntary agencies have helped materially towards this good result. I feel the greatest sympathy for those who have made a slip in life, and now, without means or character, are working their way back to good citizenship through King Edward's Labour Tents, and afterwards in the numerous Labour Homes of the Church Army, with the aid of your devoted workers, on whose self-denying efforts I pray God's richest blessing.

Outside the gates of Buckingham Palace the Prebendary was approached by a man who had been a pickpocket for eighteen years, but, under the influence of the Church Army, had been "straight" since 1901, the year of King Edward's accession. The man produced his Post Office bank-book, which showed a balance to his credit of £128, and said he would like His Majesty to see it.

I showed it to the King [said the Prebendary] and His Majesty remembered the man as the thief who had stolen thirty-two watches and purses on the Coronation Day of King Edward VII, and had expressed a wish that the King could be crowned every day. The King, in his usual kindly and friendly way, made me feel at home at once. His Majesty looked at the pictures of King Edward's Tents, and said he worked hard himself, and was sure that it was good for everybody to work hard. He was particularly interested in the photograph of our little chapel in the King Edward Tents. I showed this picture to King Edward at Biarritz not long before he died.

THE SOVEREIGNS' TOUR IN THE MIDLANDS (1914): PERSONAL LETTER TO THE DUKE OF PORTLAND

The Mayor of Nottingham received the following letter from Lord Stamfordham, the King's private secretary:

WELBECK ABBEY,
June 25, 1914.

DEAR MR. MAYOR,—I am commanded to inform you how deeply the King and Queen appreciated the loyal and enthusiastic welcome given to them yesterday by the citizens of Nottingham. Their Majesties were especially gratified to notice that not only on the official route, but in adjoining and side streets, many of the buildings had been decorated by the individual occupiers.

It was a satisfaction to the King and Queen to have an opportunity of visiting some of the factories of the famous staple industries of Nottingham and its neighbourhood and to see the actual carrying out of some of the beautiful and delicate processes of the various manufactures. The hearty greetings which their Majesties received in passing through the different buildings added another charm to these visits.

The vast concourse of children in the Nottingham Forest was most creditable to those entrusted with the necessarily complicated arrangements, and the King and Queen were delighted to see the thousands of happy faces and to hear the young voices sing, under evidently careful training and able leadership.

The King did not fail to observe that the cheerful and orderly demeanour of the enormous crowds which had assembled to welcome their Majesties rendered comparatively easy the important task of keeping the streets.

His Majesty congratulates you and all concerned upon the excellent results of the arrangements for the day's proceedings, so carefully carried out.—Yours truly,

STAMFORDHAM.

The Lord Mayor of Hull received a letter expressing the cordial appreciation of the King and Queen of the hearty welcome they received from the citizens. The letter added: "From one end of the city to the other their Majesties were acclaimed with remarkable loyalty. It was a special pleasure to both the King and the Queen to see so many children so happy, which was particularly noticed."

To the Duke of Portland His Majesty himself wrote:

Buckingham Palace,
June 27, 1914.

My dear Portland,—It was a great satisfaction to the Queen and me to carry out, during our stay at Welbeck, the three days' tour arranged by you in parts of Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire.

I would ask you to convey to the Mayors and local authorities respectively my appreciation of the admirable arrangements made by them for our reception.

We were much impressed by the enthusiastic welcome given to us in the many boroughs and local centres through which we passed, by the vast gatherings of school children, and by the fact that so many of the inhabitants had decorated their own houses, and we warmly acknowledge these proofs of loyalty and affection.

The visit to Messrs. Barringer's works at Mansfield, and to the Crown Farm Colliery village, Forest Town, were incidents of especial interest to us, and we enjoyed the opportunities of seeing something of the natural beauties of the country through which we passed.

I was glad to notice the strong muster of Territorials in the different towns, and to see so many naval and military veterans, while the big parades of the various boys' organisations testified to the popularity of these movements.

The police arrangements in the boroughs and throughout our long motor journeys were most efficiently planned and carried out, and I congratulate the Chief Constables upon the successful results of their careful and well-thought-out plans.

In conclusion, I thank you most sincerely for all the trouble you have bestowed upon the preparations for our visit, of which the Queen and I will always preserve the happiest recollections.

Believe me, very sincerely yours,
George R.I.

On the Eve of the World-War

(Telegram, July 20, 1914, published only on July 27, on the eve of the war.)

His Majesty the King to the Commander-in-Chief, Home Fleets:

After the review of the Fleet to-day, and my visit to some of the ships yesterday, I should like to express to you, and through you to the flag officers, captains, and officers and men under your command, my high appreciation of the efficient and splendid appearance of the Fleet. I am impressed by the keen spirit of all ranks and ratings in every branch of the service, and by the promptitude with which the reservists returned to duty. I am proud of my Navy.

Commander-in-Chief, Home Fleets, to His Majesty the King:

> The Home Fleets are honoured by your Majesty's inspection and very grateful for your Majesty's gracious message, which will be highly appreciated by all ranks and ratings.

Parliamentary Press Gallery Annual Dinner (May 14, 1914)

The following telegram was sent to the King:

> The members of the Parliamentary Press Gallery on the occasion of their Annual Dinner this evening, in the Royal

Palace of Westminster, Mr. John Redmond, M.P., as the principal guest, send loyal and dutiful greetings.

From Buckingham Palace the following reply was received:

> The King cordially thanks the members of the Parliamentary Press Gallery gathered together for their Annual Dinner, with Mr. John Redmond as their principal guest, for their kind message, and desires me to transmit to them his good wishes for a happy evening. His Majesty recognises the daily debt of gratitude which he and his subjects owe to the members of the Parliamentary Press Gallery.—STAMFORDHAM.

EMPIRE DAY, MAY 23, 1914

Telegram from His Majesty's Equerry to the Earl of Meath:

> The King and Queen command me to assure you of their appreciation of the loyal message which you have addressed to their Majesties on behalf of all those taking part in the Empire Day parade in Hyde Park.
>
> Their Majesties trust that those present suffered no ill-effects from the inclement weather.

TRINITY HOUSE

[The King was Master of the Corporation prior to his accession, and is still one of the Elder Brethren. The Duke of Connaught is now Master.]

Deputy Master, Trinity House, London, E.C.

My thoughts are with you and the Brethren of the Trinity House celebrating the 400th anniversary of your ancient corporation, with which body I was so happily associated for sixteen years as its Master. I continue to take the greatest interest in your important work. I offer you my hearty congratulations on this important occasion in your history.

GEORGE, R.I.

ROYAL PAVILION, ALDERSHOT,
May 20, 1914.

TO THE DOMINIONS (AUGUST 5, 1914)

I desire to express to my people of the Oversea Dominions with what appreciation and pride I have received messages from their respective Governments during the last few days. These spontaneous assurances of their fullest support recall to me the generous self-sacrificing help given by them in the past to the Mother Country.

I shall be strengthened in the discharge of the great responsibility which rests upon me by the confident belief that in this time of trial my Empire will stand united, calm, resolute, trusting in God.

GEORGE R.I.

TO THE SULTAN OF EGYPT (DECEMBER 19, 1914)

On the occasion when your Highness enters upon your high office I desire to convey to your Highness the expression of my most sincere friendship and the assurance of my unfailing support in safeguarding the integrity of Egypt and in securing her future well-being and prosperity.

Your Highness has been called upon to undertake the responsibilities of your high office at a great crisis in the national life of Egypt, and I feel convinced that you will be able, with the co-operation of your Ministers and the Protectorate of Great Britain, successfully to overcome all the influences which are seeking to destroy the independence of Egypt and the wealth, liberty, and happiness of its people.

GEORGE R. AND I.

THE KING AND THE NAVY

On the termination of his visit to Portsmouth Dockyard on May 13, 1915, the KING addressed to Admiral the Hon. Sir Hedworth Meux the following message :

I am glad to have had an opportunity of visiting the important port under your command and seeing the dockyard and naval establishments. I should like you to express to the Admiral Superintendent, the heads of departments, and the workmen in the dockyard my appreciation of the part which by their devotion to duty they are taking in maintaining the strength and efficiency of my Fleet. I was much impressed by the smart and seamanlike appearance of all ratings which I saw at Whale Island and at the barracks. It reflects great credit on the officers responsible for their training and discipline.

THE KING TO THE FRENCH PRESIDENT
(JANUARY 1, 1915)

On the occasion of the New Year I should like to express to your Excellency my good wishes for your person and for the great nation of which you are President. I am certain that the New Year will witness a still greater drawing closer of the bonds of warm friendship and alliance so happily existing between Great Britain and France, and I desire that the great struggle in which we and our Allies are engaged against the common enemy should be brought to a victorious conclusion by the complete triumph of the allied forces.

M. Poincaré replied as follows:

I thank your Majesty for your sentiments, and I beg you to receive the ardent wishes that I form for you and for the great nation the friend and ally of France. I have full confidence in the complete success of our arms. France, resolved to struggle until a complete triumph in the common cause, is proud to be to-day defending the liberty of peoples and the moral patrimony of humanity together with England and our allies.

To the American President (January 1, 1915)

It affords me sincere pleasure to convey to you on the commencement of a New Year my hearty good wishes for your personal happiness, and for the welfare and prosperity of the United States of America, to which we are united by such close ties of friendship and intimacy.

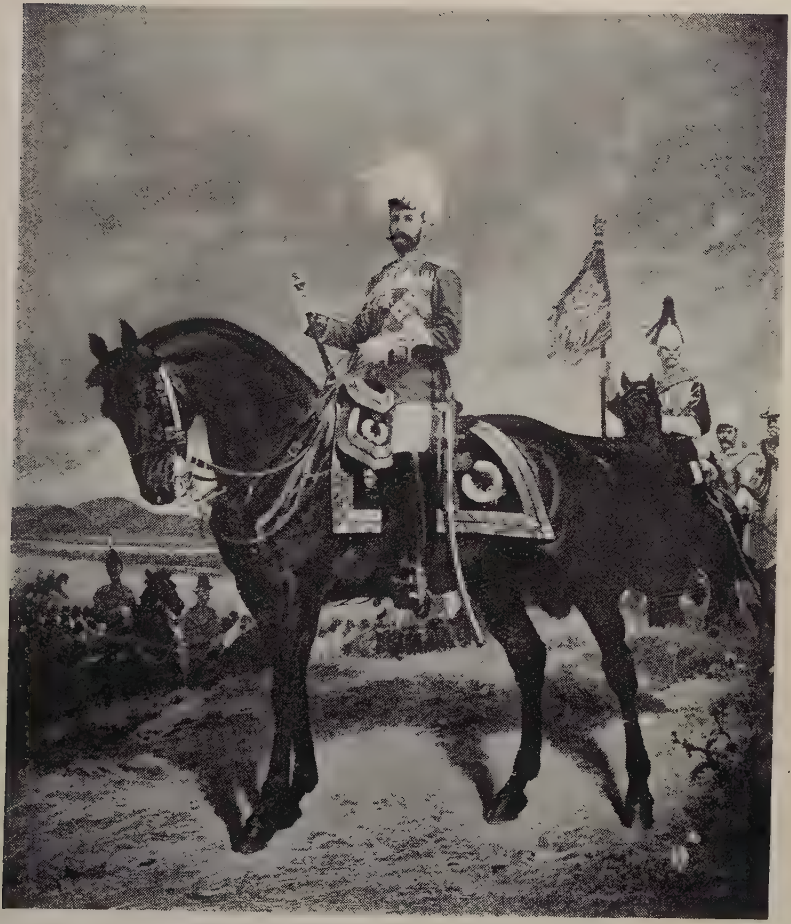
Welsh Eisteddfod at Bangor (August 6, 1915)

The King is greatly touched by the loyal, warm-hearted message addressed by you to His Majesty in the name of the ten thousand Welshmen assembled at the National Eisteddfod of Wales. The assurances it contains of the united and enthusiastic support of the Welsh nation in these critical days strengthens His Majesty's unswerving conviction that victory will be ultimately secured to the Empire and our Allies.

Stamfordham.

The Household Brigade

After inspecting the then newly formed infantry battalion of the Household Brigade, in the presence



His Majesty King George V
(in British Field-Marshal's uniform)

Portrait by M. Georges Scott. Reproduced by permission of Mr. T. J. Lennard, Sheriff of Bristol, who presented the work to the City Art Gallery, Bristol

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

of the Queen, Queen Alexandra, Princess Mary, and Princess Victoria, His Majesty said:

Colonel Portal, Officers, N.C.O.'s, and Men of the Household Battalion,—It gives me much pleasure to see you on parade here to-day, and I congratulate all ranks on the battalion's smart and soldierlike appearance and steadiness under arms. This is the first occasion in the history of the Household Cavalry that an infantry battalion for active service has been formed from its regiments. Remember that you are members of either the 1st Life Guards, the 2nd Life Guards, or the Blues, and I am convinced that as infantry you will maintain the splendid traditions which are the pride of these regiments. You are shortly leaving for the Front, and I shall follow all your doings with the greatest interest. I wish you God-speed and good luck.

His Majesty wore the uniform of a Field-Marshal, and was received by Field-Marshals Lord Grenfell and Viscount French, Major-General Sir Francis Lloyd, and many officers of the Guards.

The Ultimatum to Belgium

(Published August 5, 1915)

On the anniversary of the German ultimatum to Belgium, King George telegraphed to King Albert:

On the occasion of the anniversary of the day on which my country was forced to take up arms against a Power which preferred war to a conference, and violated in a most flagrant manner its treaty obligations, I desire to express to you my firm conviction that our united efforts will lead to a victorious issue, and to assure you of my unfailing co-operation and the determination of myself and my country, in union with your valiant troops, to continue the war until it is terminated to our satisfaction and until peace is assured.

The KING OF THE BELGIANS replied:

I express to you my deep gratitude for the telegram which you have sent me and my unshakeable conviction that the efforts of the allied armies will lead to a peace founded on the triumph of justice.

Having at the outset sacrificed herself in order to safeguard her honour and to remain faithful to the treaties which ensured her autonomous existence and the very equilibrium of Europe, Belgium will continue to do her duty until the end, in spite of the suffering and mourning with which she is overwhelmed. Your fresh expression of sympathy touches me profoundly, and from my heart I give you the assurance of my devoted attachment.

KING AND POPE (1915)

This telegram (published by the Press Bureau on January 7) was sent by the King in reply to the Pope's proposal for an exchange of prisoners who are unfit for military service.

I desire to thank your Holiness for your telegram. It is with deep satisfaction that I and my Government welcomed your Holiness's proposal, which lent weight to the suggestions we had already made to the German Government. That Government has just signified its consent, and I trust that the arrangement will have been put into force before many days of the New Year have passed.

GEORGE R. AND I.

CONGRATULATIONS TO A MOTHER (JULY 27, 1915)

Mrs. Stroud, a widow, living in Despard Road, Highgate, London, who has six sons in the Army, received the congratulations of the King in this letter from the Keeper of the Privy Purse:

MADAM,—I am commanded by the King to convey to you an expression of His Majesty's appreciation of the patriotic spirit which has prompted your six sons to give their services at the present time to the Army.

The King was much gratified to hear of the manner in which they had readily responded to the call of their Sovereign and their country, and I am to express to you and to them His Majesty's congratulations on having contributed in so full a measure to the cause for which all the people of the British Empire are so bravely fighting.

I have the honour to be, Madam, your obedient servant,

(Signed) FREDERICK PONSONBY,
Keeper of the Privy Purse.

MOSLEMS' MESSAGE TO THE KING

On September 3, 1915, this letter from the Shehu of Bornu was officially issued in London. In it the Shehu congratulates the Governor-General of Nigeria on the capture by the British troops of

Garua, and offers £1000 towards the expenses of the war. The letter runs:

> In the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.
>
> Praise be to God.
>
> Peace be to His Prophet.
>
> This letter is sent by the slave of God, Abubukr Shehu of Bornu, son of the Shehu Ibrahim, son of the Shehu Umar, son of the Shehu Mohaman Lamino Kanomi.
>
> I, Shehu of Bornu, established by the authority of the King of England, write to our well-wisher, the representative of the King of England, Governor Lugard. Salutations, blessing, and greatness be with you.
>
> We have received the news that God has given victory to the King of England in the capture of the German stronghold. When we heard of the fall of Garua, our hearts were filled with joy.
>
> We rejoiced greatly, and all our people, by reason of the victory. Three days were spent in public rejoicings and sports in the Dandal (the great square in the Bornu capital).
>
> When our rejoicings were finished, I called my councillors together. We took counsel together. We said that the sum of £3500 which we contributed to the war chest in the month of Zulkaadah was not enough. I and my councillors were agreed upon this. We said that we ought to make a further contribution in order to strengthen our Lord the King of England, in order that he might eat up his enemies. The Wazir, the Liman Amsami, said to me, "Oh, Shehu, although you have sent many cattle and sheep and kola to the soldiers at Mora, behold this is not enough."
>
> Our treasurer, Mallam Muktar, said to us, "There is no lack of money in the native treasury. The taxes will be paid shortly."
>
> For this reason I and my councillors decided to offer a contribution of £1000 in thanksgiving for the victory.
>
> We pray to God every day that He will continue to give victory to the King of England in all parts of the world. May Almighty God give him victory and long life.
>
> You, Governor Lugard, who art before us, may God lengthen your days.
>
> Salutations.
>
> Written on Wednesday, the 17th day of Shaaban, in the year of the Hijra, 1333.

THE KING AND THE FRENCH ARMY

On September 30, 1915, the King telegraphed to President Poincaré:

I have followed with admiration the magnificent exploits of the French Army, and seize this opportunity of congratulating you, M. le Président, as well as General Joffre and the whole French nation, on the great success achieved by the valiant French troops since the beginning of our joint offensive.

GEORGE R.I.

The PRESIDENT replied:

In reading your message of praise the French armies and their leader feel a deep sentiment of gratitude and pride. They know how much their confidence in the co-operation of the Allied troops and the brilliant offensive of Field-Marshal Sir John French have contributed to the joint success achieved during the last few days.

I am interpreting the feeling of the entire French nation in expressing to your Majesty and to the valiant British Army my heartiest congratulations.

RAYMOND POINCARÉ.

THE KING TO SIR JOHN (NOW LORD) FRENCH

The Field-Marshal Commanding in Chief received the following message from the King:

To Field-Marshal Sir John French,
Commander-in-Chief,
British Expeditionary Force.

September 30, 1915.

I heartily congratulate you and all ranks of my

Army under your command upon the success which has attended their gallant efforts since the commencement of the combined attack.

I recognise that this strenuous and determined fighting is but the prelude to greater deeds and further victories.

I trust the sick and wounded are doing well.

GEORGE R.I.

The COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF replied :

To His Majesty the King,
Buckingham Palace.

October 1, 1915.

Your Majesty's Forces in France are deeply grateful for your Majesty's most gracious message. There is no sacrifice the troops are not prepared to make to uphold the honour and traditions of your Majesty's Army and to secure final and complete victory.

J. D. P. FRENCH, Field-Marshal.

THE KING'S APPEAL TO ALL

This stirring message was published in the papers on October 23, 1915, and was placarded on the walls and in front of hotels and other buildings in the early morning.

BUCKINGHAM PALACE.

TO MY PEOPLE

At this grave moment in the struggle between my people and a highly organised enemy who has transgressed the Laws of Nations and changed the ordinance that binds civilised Europe together, I appeal to you.

I rejoice in my Empire's effort, and I feel pride in the voluntary response from my Subjects all over the world who have sacrificed home, fortune, and life itself, in order that another may not inherit the free Empire which their ancestors and mine have built.

I ask you to make good these sacrifices.

The end is not in sight. More men and yet more are wanted to keep my Armies in the field, and through them to secure Victory and enduring Peace.

In ancient days the darkest moment has ever produced in men of our race the sternest resolve.

I ask you, men of all classes, to come forward voluntarily, and take your share in the fight.

In freely responding to my appeal, you will be giving your support to our brothers, who, for long months, have nobly upheld Britain's past traditions and the glory of her Arms.

George R.I.

After the Mishap to the King in France: His Second Visit to the Front

Before leaving France for England after his accident at the end of October, 1915, the King issued this Order of the Day, which appeared in the English journals on November 3:

Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers, and Men.

I am happy to have found myself once more with my Armies.

It is especially gratifying to me to have been able to see some of those that have been newly created. For I have watched with interest the growth of these Troops from the first days of Recruit Drill and through the different stages of training until their final inspection on the eve of departure for the Front as organised Divisions. Already they have justified the general conviction then formed of their splendid fighting worth.

Since I was last among you, you have fought many strenuous battles. In all you have reaped renown and proved yourselves at least equal to the highest traditions of the British Army.

In company with our noble Allies you have baffled the infamous conspiracy against the law and liberty of Europe, so long and insidiously prepared.

These achievements have involved vast sacrifices. But your countrymen who watch your campaign with sympathetic admiration will, I am well assured, spare no effort to fill your ranks and afford you all supplies.

I have decorated many of you. But had I decorated all who deserve recognition for conspicuous valour, there would have been no limit, for the whole Army is illustrious.

It is a matter of sincere regret to me that my accident should have prevented my seeing all the Troops I had intended, but during my stay among you I have seen enough to fill my heart with admiration of your patient, cheerful endurance of life in the trenches: a life either of weary monotony or of terrible tumult. It is the dogged determination evinced by all ranks which will at last bring you to victory. Keep the goal in sight and remember it is the final lap that wins.

George R.I.

THE KING'S MESSAGE TO ULSTERMEN

In a message to the Ulster Division, the KING said: "Your prompt and patriotic answer to the nation's call to arms will never be forgotten. Ever since your enrolment I have closely watched the growth and steady progress of all units. I shall continue to follow with interest the fortunes of your division."

TRIBUTE TO THE IRISH GUARDS

QUEEN MARY DISTRIBUTES QUEEN ALEXANDRA'S SHAMROCK

On March 17, 1916, their Majesties visited the Irish Guards at Warley Barracks, Brentwood; and the KING thus addressed them in the presence of Lord Kitchener, Lord French, General Sir Francis Lloyd, and Mr. John Redmond, M.P.:

On St. Patrick's Day, when Irishmen the world over unite to celebrate the memory of their Patron Saint, it gives me great pleasure to inspect the Reserve Battalion of my Irish Guards, and to testify my appreciation of the services rendered by the regiment in this war.

The regiment was created by Queen Victoria in 1900 to commemorate the heroism of Irish regiments in the South African War. By the splendid achievements in your first campaign you have proved yourselves worthy of this proud tribute to Irish valour, and have fully maintained the high traditions of my Brigade of Guards.

I gratefully remember the heroic endurance of the 1st Battalion in the arduous retreat from Mons

—again at Ypres on that critical November 1st, when, as Lord Cavan, your Brigadier, wrote, those who were left showed the enemy that Irish Guards must be reckoned with, however hard hit.

After twenty-eight days of incessant fighting against heavy odds the battalion came out of the line less than a company strong, with only four officers—a glorious tribute to Irish loyalty and endurance.

The graves that mark the last resting-place of your gallant comrades will ever remain a monument of your resistance.

In conferring the Victoria Cross on Lance-Corporal, now Lieut., Michael O'Leary, the first Irish Guardsman to win this coveted distinction, I was proud to honour a deed that in its fearless contempt of death illustrated the spirit of my Irish Guards.

At Loos the 2nd Battalion received its baptism of fire, and confirmed the high reputation already won by the 1st Battalion.

I deeply deplore the loss of so many officers and men, including, alas, three commanding officers! But the splendid appearance of the men on parade to-day, among whom I am glad to see many who have recovered from wounds and sickness, tells me that the spirit of the Irish is unquenchable.

It has been a great pleasure to the Queen to hand you the shamrock, the annual gift of Queen Alexandra. It is the badge which unites all Irishmen, and you have shown that it stands for loyalty, courage, and endurance in adversity. May it carry you to victory.

Be assured that in all trials to come my thoughts and prayers will ever be with you, and I wish you all good luck.

TELEGRAM TO THE KING OF ITALY (1916)

I wish to assure you with what satisfaction the news of the latest successes of your troops has been received by me and my people.

I am proud to think that some of my soldiers are fighting alongside those of the gallant Italian Army. GEORGE R.I.

THE KING AND PRESIDENT WILSON'S BIRTHDAY, DECEMBER 29, 1916

I want to offer my sincere congratulations on the anniversary of your birth, and I trust that your health has not suffered from the arduous duties of the year.

THE KING'S SPEECH TO THE GRAND FLEET

"*You drove the enemy into his harbours*"

On Sunday night, June 18, 1916, it was announced that on the previous Tuesday evening [quite unknown to the public] the King left London and returned to Buckingham Palace early in the morning of Sunday. His Majesty had inspected the whole of the Grand Fleet and visited all the wounded from his ships in the Royal Naval Hospital at South Queensferry and in the Royal Infirmary at Edinburgh. A feature of this event was the King's visit to the heavy battleships which had arrived on the scene of the Jutland battle when our cruisers had sent the enemy running for home after firing their first terrific salvo. After the inspection His Majesty, accompanied by Admiral Beatty, the heroic commander, landed, and the men marched past in ships' companies for his inspection.

The King thus addressed the representatives of units on parade :

Sir John Jellicoe, Officers and Men of the Grand Fleet,—You have waited for nearly two years with most exemplary patience for the opportunity of meeting and engaging the enemy's fleet.

I can well understand how trying has been this period and how great must have been the relief when you knew on May 31 that the enemy had been sighted.

Unfavourable weather conditions and approaching darkness prevented that complete result which you all expected, but you did all that was possible in the circumstances ; you drove the enemy into his harbours and inflicted on him very severe losses, and you added another page to the glorious traditions of the British Navy.

You could not do more, and for your splendid work I thank you.

His Majesty sent this message to the Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Fleet :

I am thankful to have had this opportunity of congratulating you and the Grand Fleet on the result of the recent engagement in the North Sea.

Assure all ranks and ratings that the name of the British Navy never stood higher in the eyes of their fellow-countrymen, whose pride and confidence in their achievements are unabated.

Good luck and God-speed.

May your future efforts be blessed with complete success.

GEORGE R.I.

[Prince Albert, the King's second son, then twenty years old, took part as a sub-lieutenant in his ship in the naval battle off Jutland.]

THE KING AND THE SANDHURST CADETS

On Sunday, July 2, 1916, the King thus addressed the cadets of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst, at church parade :

I congratulate you on your smart, soldier-like appearance and steadiness in the ranks. You will soon become officers in my Army, and as such you will have the great responsibility of watching over the welfare of your men and leading them in battle.

In order to become an efficient leader the first essential is that you should gain the confidence of your men, and this means that you must know how to lead them. Your time here is necessarily very short ; you must therefore work all the harder in order to acquire the requisite knowledge.

Knowledge alone is not sufficient. You must cultivate a high standard of honour, moral conduct, steadfastness, and resolution, and above all must be loyal to your superiors and to one another. These qualities have always been the distinguishing characteristics of officers in the British Army.

Most of you have come from Public Schools, and I am sure you will through life do your utmost to maintain their great traditions. Remember that the tone of the cadet of to-day will be reflected in the character of the officer of to-morrow.

I hope and believe that I may rely upon you to maintain untarnished the very high reputation of those splendid officers who have preceded you and who have fought so gallantly in the present great war.

THE KING'S THIRD VISIT TO THE FRONT

"*I return home more proud than ever of you.*"

On the 16th of August, 1916, it was officially announced that His Majesty had spent a week with the British Army in France. Before leaving for England the King issued the following General Order:

Officers, N.C.O.'s, and Men.

It has been a great pleasure and satisfaction to me to be with my Armies during the past week. I have been able to judge for myself of their splendid condition for war and of the spirit of cheerful confidence which animates all ranks, united in loyal co-operation to their Chiefs and to one another.

Since my last visit to the Front there has been almost uninterrupted fighting on parts of our line. The offensive recently begun has since been resolutely maintained by day and by night. I have had opportunities of visiting some of the scenes of the later desperate struggles, of appreciating, to a slight extent, the demands made upon your courage and physical endurance in order to assail and capture positions prepared during the past two years and stoutly defended to the last.

I have realised not only the splendid work which has been done in immediate touch with the enemy —in the air, underground, as well as on the ground —but also the vast organisations behind the fighting-line, honourable alike to the genius of the initiators and to the heart and hand of the workers. Everywhere there is proof that all, men and women, are playing their part, and I rejoice to think their noble efforts are being heartily seconded by all classes at home.

The happy relations maintained by my Armies and those of our French Allies were equally noticeable between my troops and the inhabitants of the districts in which they were quartered, and from whom they have received a cordial welcome ever since their first arrival in France.

Do not think that I and your fellow-countrymen forget the heavy sacrifices which the Armies have made and the bravery and endurance they have displayed during the past two years of bitter conflict. These sacrifices have not been in vain; the arms of the Allies will never be laid down until our cause has triumphed.

I return home more proud than ever of you.

May God guide you to Victory. George R.I.

The "Swift" and the "Broke"

Telegram to the Vice-Admiral, Dover:

His Majesty the King commands that you should convey to the commanders, officers, and men of *Swift* and *Broke* his hearty congratulations on the skill, dash, and bravery displayed on the night of the 20th–21st April, 1917, off Dover, which resulted in the sinking of two enemy destroyers.

School of Oriental Studies

"*May God bless its labours*"

On February 23, 1917, the King, accompanied by his consort, inaugurated the new Oriental School, which absorbed the previously scattered classes and schools of Oriental training in London, chiefly from University College and King's College, and provided them with a convenient and central home.

His Majesty, in reply to the address presented by Sir John Hewett, said:

I thank you for your loyal and dutiful address. I am glad to be the patron of the School of Oriental Studies, and it gives me particular gratification to take part to-day in the ceremony of opening this fine building, in which the school is henceforth to carry on its work.

I cannot sufficiently emphasise the wide scope and vast importance of that work. The school will afford fresh opportunities of study to those services which have been the pioneers of progress and the instruments of good government in India and Egypt. It will furnish with a fuller technical equipment the pioneers of commerce and industry, who, in each successive generation, undertake the duty of upholding the honoured fame of British trade in the East. Its work will serve to develop the sympathy which already so happily exists between my subjects and those of my Far Eastern Ally, Japan.

But more than this is to be looked for from the school. If it happily succeeds in imparting to the pupils sent out as teachers of unselfish government and civilised commerce a clearer comprehension of the thoughts and lives of the diverse races of the East, the good effects of that success will extend far beyond the immediate and tangible results. The ancient literature and the art of India are of unique interest in the history of human endeavour. I look to the school to quicken the public interest in the intellectual tradition of that great Continent, and to promote and assist the labours of students in these departments of knowledge to the mutual advantage of both countries.

The school is about to open its doors in the midst of an unparalleled crisis in the world's history. For more than two years the peoples of my Dominions, with loyalty and devotion, have vied with each other in offering their blood and treasure for the prosecution of a righteous war. The sense of common sacrifice and common endeavour has drawn us all nearer to one another in feeling and sympathy.

Meanwhile, we believe that the peaceful labours of this institution, in spreading accurate and scientific knowledge of Eastern life and thought, will foster the spirit of loyalty and patriotism, and knit together still closer the many nations of my Empire.

I am very conscious of how much we owe to those distinguished scholars and statesmen whose undaunted efforts have largely aided in establishing this school. I deeply regret that one of the most illustrious, Lord Cromer, has not been permitted to see the completion of his share in the work. Had he lived, his wise judgment and unrivalled experience would have been of priceless value in council.

I recognise and appreciate the debt of gratitude which this school owes to the public-spirited benefactors who have contributed so liberally to its endowment fund. In so doing, they have rendered a service to the Empire, and I trust that the beneficence of the community will endow the school with funds adequate to all the demands which may be made upon its teaching capacity.

I now declare this School of Oriental Studies open. May God bless its labours in the advancement of learning, unity, and good government among my people of every race and language.

TELEGRAM ON LIFEBOAT DAY IN LONDON

WINDSOR CASTLE, *May* 1, 1917. To the President, Royal National Lifeboat Institution,—Since the day when the King was President of the Royal National Lifeboat Institution His Majesty has followed with keen interest and admiration the noble work it has achieved, and on the occasion of to-day's appeal the King has much pleasure in contributing the sum of three hundred pounds to the funds of your institution.—(Signed) F. J. PONSONBY, Keeper of His Majesty's Privy Purse.

TELEGRAM TO MR. REDMOND

June 10, 1917. "I am grieved to hear of the death from wounds received in action of your brother, Major Redmond, who has given gallant service and a noble example in the war. I heartily sympathise with you and his family in your loss. —GEORGE R.I."

AT CARDIFF (ROYAL TOUR, JUNE 26, 1912)

The King, in reply to an address read by Professor Griffiths, said:

It gives me great pleasure to have this opportunity of revisiting the University College of South Wales and Monmouthshire, and of witnessing the very great progress which has been made with the building of which I laid the foundation-stone seven years ago.

I have watched with keen interest the gradual realisation of the scheme for the National University of Wales, which owes its inception to the patriotism and public spirit of leaders of Welsh thought, and is rapidly being carried to final completion by the enthusiasm and whole-hearted support of all classes in the Principality.

Last year it was my privilege to open the new University buildings at Bangor, and to visit the oldest of the University colleges at Aberystwyth, and what I saw then and see to-day assures me that in no part of my dominions is the development of higher education prosecuted with greater energy and success than in Wales.

The Research Laboratory, which I have had the pleasure of opening to-day, is an important and creditable addition to the University, and should be an encouragement to further efforts in the cause you have at heart.

I echo your hope that those who hold the foremost place in the business activities of this great industrial centre will more and more realise that they can best advance the common welfare by identifying themselves with the college and supporting it in its work.

I thank you on behalf of the Queen, as well as myself, for your good wishes, and I shall rejoice with you when the design for the building of the college shall have been carried to completion.

At Caerphilly Castle, on the same day, their Majesties were received by the Marquis and Marchioness of Bute, with whom they took tea. Replying to an address of welcome presented by the District Council, the King said :

The Queen and I are very glad to receive a loyal and dutiful address of welcome from the inhabitants of Caerphilly and district. It gives me great pleasure to visit your historic town. Its ancient castle recalls times, very different from our own, when strenuous warriors met in battle around its walls. That martial age is happily long past, and the scene of those warlike feats is now the home of loyal, peaceful, and industrious people, but the courage and devotion of those heroes of centuries ago are a precious heritage, and still inspire and sustain our efforts in all good causes. We wish you all success, prosperity, and honour, and thank you heartily for your good wishes.

The Air Raid in London (June 13, 1917)

His Majesty to the Bishop of London (read by His Lordship June 19).

Buckingham Palace.

The King asks that you will assure the parents of those children who were killed during the air raid of June 13 while at school how His Majesty and the Queen are thinking of them and their saddened homes, especially to-day, when the bodies of their little ones are laid to rest.

The early ending of young innocent lives, at all times pathetic, is made so more than ever in these cruel and tragic circumstances.

Their Majesties pray that the mourners may be blessed with God's help and comfort in their sorrow.

The King at "A Naval Base"

On or about June 23, 1917 (the precise dates may not be given), the King journeyed to "a naval base" (the name of which was, as usual, concealed) and visited the Grand Fleet once more. His Majesty, who returned to Buckingham Palace on the morning of June 27, passed his nights on board ship. After church on Sunday morning (June 24) the King distributed decorations to those who had received honours for their gallantry in the battle of Jutland. To Admiral Sir David Beatty was given the G.C.B.; to Rear-Admiral Hugh Evan Thomas the K.C.B., the King knighting him with Sir David Beatty's sword. Admirals Sir C. Madden and Sir F. C. D. Sturdee, and many others, were decorated. Among them was one of the most famous of our submarine officers, Commander Noel F. Laurence, who did splendid work in the Baltic, and last year in the North Sea accomplished the astounding feat of putting two torpedoes into the German Dreadnought *Grosser Kurfürst* and one into the *Thüringen*. Unluckily both these ships, though badly damaged, contrived to totter back into port, and Commander Laurence had a warm two hours from the enemy, who hunted him with depth charges (explosives dropped where his submarine was supposed to be) and other horrors, luckily without success. The King inspected one of the largest and latest submarines. This is a veritable grand hotel among submarines—full of machinery as they all are, but containing quite spacious cabins, which are as commodious as many in surface ships, a bathroom, and a lavatory for use under water. The crew can live in this queer vessel of theirs.

It was officially announced on June 27, 1917, that the King had returned to Buckingham Palace after paying a visit to the whole of the Grand Fleet. On leaving His Majesty sent the following message to Admiral Sir David Beatty:

I wish to congratulate you and the Grand Fleet on the high standard of preparedness I found on coming among you.

Never has the British Navy stood higher in the estimation of friend or foe.

You can assure all ranks and ratings under your command that their brothers throughout the Empire rely upon them with pride and confidence to defend our shores and commerce.

I thank you for your patient endurance that keeps the British Navy ever ready to enhance the glories of its historic traditions and secures to us and our Allies the ocean highways of the world.

May God's blessing rest upon you all and upon your work.

George R.I.

To H.M. the King.

The Grand Fleet thanks your Majesty for your gracious message. Your Majesty's stay among us has afforded an opportunity of giving expression to our unswerving loyalty and devotion to your person.

We are proud of the confidence your Majesty reposes in us, more especially as it is a confidence based upon intimate knowledge of the Fleet and those who man it.

David Beatty.

A DEAD "V.C." HERO

Mrs. Morrow, of Newmills, County Tyrone, mother of Private Morrow, 1st Royal Irish Fusiliers, who won the Victoria Cross for succouring the wounded, and was killed thirteen days later, received the following autograph letter from Buckingham Palace:

It is a matter of sincere regret to me that the death of Private Morrow deprived me of the pride of personally conferring upon him the Victoria Cross, the greatest of all distinctions.

GEORGE R.I.

THE KING'S "ADMIRATION"

The head master of a Burton-on-Trent school, Mr. A. Knight, all of whose three sons were killed in action within three months, received a letter from the King assuring him of His Majesty's sympathy. The letter adds:

The King regards with great admiration this splendid sacrifice which your gallant sons have made in the great struggle wherein the Empire is now engaged.

[This is one of many similar letters and telegrams sent by His Majesty in 1914–17.]

THE KING AND THE UNIVERSITIES

In June 1917, the Vice-Chancellor of Leeds University received the following message from the King with reference to the work of the University in connection with the war:

His Majesty feels that the assistance of the Universities is a great asset to the cause for which we are fighting, as science plays such a prominent part in modern warfare.

THE HULL RAIDS

The King's telegram to the Lord Mayor of Hull (June, 1917):

It has long been our wish to show by our presence how much we have felt for the citizens of this great port in the dastardly attacks to which they have been subjected.

BEER FOR WORKERS

It was announced on July 5, 1917, that Lord Stamfordham had written to Mr. Will Thorne, M.P., as follows:

BUCKINGHAM PALACE,
June 23, 1917.

DEAR MR. THORNE,—Many thanks for your letter, and the enclosed post card from one of your friends in Barrow-in-Furness.

The question of the shortage of beer, especially during the summer months, is one which demands careful and prompt consideration.

I am passing on your letter to Lord Rhondda, and adding that the matter is one which the King hopes will be dealt with in a considerate and sympathetic manner.—Yours very truly,

STAMFORDHAM.

CANADA DAY, JULY 2, 1917.

The King and Queen to the Governor-General of Canada (the Duke of Devonshire):

It was a great satisfaction to the Queen and me that we were able to be present at to-day's service in Westminster Abbey in commemoration of the fiftieth anniversary of the Confederation of Canada and in honour of her sons who have fallen in the war.

I rejoice with the Dominion in celebrating this Jubilee of its strong, ever-growing, prosperous life, and I join in honouring those, the living and the dead, who by their deeds have added a glorious chapter to the Empire's history.

HIS MAJESTY'S FOURTH VISIT TO THE FRONT, ACCOMPANIED FOR THE FIRST TIME BY THE QUEEN

On Saturday night, July 14, 1917, this special order was issued by the King through the Press Bureau:

On the conclusion of my fourth visit to the British Armies in the Field, I leave you with feelings of admiration and gratitude for past achievements and of confidence in future efforts. On all sides I have witnessed the scenes of your triumphs.

The battlefields of the Somme, the Ancre, Arras, Vimy, and Messines have shown me what great results can be attained by the courage and devotion of all arms and services under efficient commanders and staffs. Nor do I forget the valuable work done by the various departments behind the fighting-line, including those who direct and man the highly developed system of railways and other means of communication.

Your comrades too—the men and women of the industrial Army at home—have claims on your remembrance for their untiring service in helping you to meet the enemy on terms which are not merely equal, but daily improving.

It was a great pleasure to the Queen to accompany me, and to become personally acquainted with the excellent arrangements for the care of the sick and wounded, whose welfare is ever close to her heart.

For the past three years the Armies of the Empire and workers in the homelands behind them have risen superior to every difficulty and every trial. The splendid successes already gained, in concert with our gallant Allies, have advanced us well on the way towards the completion of the task we undertook. There are doubtless fierce struggles still to come, and heavy strains on our endurance to be borne.

But be the road before us long or short, the spirit and pluck which have brought you so far will never fail, and, under God's guidance, the final and complete victory of our just cause is assured.

General Headquarters,
British Armies in France,
July 14, 1917.

The King announces his Return from France

From the official Court Circular :

Buckingham Palace,
July 14.

The King and Queen, attended by the Countess of

Airlie, Brigadier-General the Earl of Shaftesbury, the Hon. Sir Derek Keppel, Lieut.-Colonel Clive Wigram, and the Earl of Cromer, arrived at the Palace this evening from France and Belgium.

During the past fortnight His Majesty, accompanied by the Prince of Wales, has visited General Headquarters and all the different Army and lines of communication areas.

The Queen, during the same period, has visited a large number of hospitals and institutions in the lines of communication area.

Their Majesties visited the King and Queen of the Belgians, and also entertained the President of the French Republic at luncheon.

[No Court Circular had appeared during their Majesties' twelve days' absence in France.]

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER XI

WHY THE SOVEREIGNS ARE POPULAR

Experiences in London : Making the Train their Home

The popularity of all Sovereigns and their Consorts is a plant of slow growth. For reasons which are too obvious to need detailing Queen Mary, with her eminently practical mind, could not have been under any illusions on this point. The universal admiration which she has so long enjoyed is largely due to her kindly concern for the welfare of the poor and her warm-hearted support of charitable and semi-charitable institutions of almost every kind. She pays a surprise visit to the Ada Lewis House for Working Women and Girls in the New Kent Road. One of the residents describes the event with the vivacity and care for detail of a reporter. " Why, that's just like the Queen ! " exclaims a girl who is looking out of a window of the Ada Lewis House. A private motor-car has just driven up, and a lady in a dark green costume, with black fox furs and a black hat with feathers, steps out. Queen Mary is in the house paying a surprise visit. She enters the sitting-room and dining-rooms, and is then taken to the laundry, where residents can wash their own clothes. She is shown the method of obtaining hot irons from a penny-in-the-slot machine, and the oven for drying clothes. The sewing-room, kitchens, and each kind of bedroom are also visited. The Queen "hopes that all the bedrooms will soon be occupied."

Her Majesty learnt that those residents who could not afford to pay more might live on a shilling a day, as thus:

	s.	d.
Breakfast: Cup of tea, 1d., bread 1d., fish 1d. .		3
Dinner: Irish stew and potatoes		4
Tea: Cup of tea 1d., bread 1d., relish 1d. . .		3
Supper: Bread and milk		2
	1	0

Another day we find the Queen at the Dartmouth Home for Crippled Boys, at Blackheath, while her consort is at the International Rugby Football Match at Twickenham. Some of the quick-witted little cripples speak of Her Majesty as "the lady with the kind eyes," the eyes that later so charmed the Parisians. In the schoolroom, where the boys sing the National Anthem and two songs, is a photograph taken some years ago of Her Majesty with Prince George on her back. "Ah, there is my little George," exclaims the Queen. The cook and housemaid are at work in the kitchen when Her Majesty enters. "What a nice, airy room," she says to the cook; "and that stove looks very useful, too." The daughter of the superintendent reminds the Queen that the King, when he opened the home seventeen years ago, warmed his hands in front of the kitchen fire. "Really," says Her Majesty, who was with the King on that occasion, "was it as cold as that? I have forgotten." A black kitten is curled up on a chair. "What a dear little thing," says the

Queen, as she plays with it with the end of her fur. She notes that the boys' dining-room is quite close to the kitchen on the same floor, and says: "That must be very useful; it saves quite a lot of trouble, I should think." In the workshops, where shoemaking and tailoring are taught, the Queen sees the boys repairing football boots for a large private school at Blackheath; takes up one of the finished boots, examines it and compliments the matron on the workmanship. She talks to several boys, notably to Arthur Orchard, a bright lad of fifteen, who lost both his legs in a street accident. She praises him for the way he had "turned" an old coat he was wearing. "It really looks as good as new," she says. "She was just like a mother," declared the boy afterwards.

We see Her Majesty at the most out-of-the-way places. One Saturday afternoon (1914), accompanied by the King and Princess Mary, she passed a couple of hours at the Docks, looking at the goods valued at £3,000,000 in one only of the warehouses. They were shown a pile of ostrich feathers, "worth £250,000," said one of the officials, remembering that even Majesties and Princesses like to know the cost of everything. The Queen learnt that the better feathers, the largest, had gone down in price as the smaller plumes were in fashion. The smaller plumes were dearer. "I think that is a pity. The larger plumes are much prettier." Their Majesties passed into the art department. One of the party said most of the articles came from China, and the King remarked: "Surely those carved ivories are from Japan, and very fine examples, too, of Japanese work." Although, as I have noted elsewhere, His Majesty is not a great cigar smoker, he was attracted by the thousands of Havanas and other choice "weeds" from the Philippines. Pointing to a large bundle of half-crown cigars: "Surely," he said, "those are packed too tight. Ah, they're green, so I suppose it won't matter very much." He was informed that the majority of the teas stored were from India and Ceylon. "Personally," he said, "I prefer China tea, and nearly always drink it when I can obtain it. The flavour is more delicate." The Queen agreed. [Presently the King's opinion appeared in the advertisements.]

The ramble through the underground wine vaults was voted by Her Majesty "quite an adventure." The Royal pair tasted some of the port, too! Some one told Her Majesty that the vaults contained a famous rat-catcher, a cat, which had been locked up for the time. "I should like to see it," she said. Being released, pussy leapt on Princess Mary's shoulder.

Up to a point the august couple and their daughter had been accorded a strictly private view, but presently they entered galleries containing curios, etc., for sale by auction in the following week. Here (said a recorder of the event) a large number of intending buyers had gathered. The King and Queen mingled with the other visitors, who did not recognize them. One lady said to an attendant: "Who is the tall lady in blue upstairs? I should think she must be going to buy largely, for she seems to be looking at everything, and evidently knows what she is about. She looks something like the Queen, but of course I know it cannot be Her

Majesty." Just then the King and Queen and the Princess appeared at the head of the stairs, and the lady added, "It *is* the Queen, and there are the King and Princess Mary with her. How funny nobody seemed to know they were here!" Before leaving the upper department, their Majesties signed the visitors' book, the record reading: "George R.I., Mary, Mary."

St. Thomas's Hospital was known to their Majesties in the last reign; on March 2, 1914, they first visited it as King and Queen. In the "City Ward" they were shown a child who had been knocked down by a motor-car. The King deeply sympathised with the child, adding: "Unfortunately some children are very careless, and will insist on running into, or across, the roadway right in front of advancing motor-cars. It is not always possible to avoid them."

Passing into one of the surgical wards, their Majesties chatted with the patients, and asked about their cases and prospects. A partially convalescent bricklayer's labourer came to "attention" and saluted. The King returned the salute, saying, "You are an old soldier." "Yes, your Majesty, I served for fifteen years in your Majesty's Grenadier Guards." In the children's wards the Queen talked to several little ones. Dr. Fairbairn told the visitors that the babies' room was kept so warm that there was hardly need of an incubator. The question of this provision is a vexed one, and an official remarked: "I am very glad, your Majesty, that we shall not have to go to that expense." The King: "I am glad your present provision is so suitable, but I think an incubator is very necessary in some cases." In the "Edward Ward" (named after Edward VI, and not after His late Majesty) many of the patients are policemen, who formed up and cheered the visitors.

On July 4, 1913 (two days before the twentieth anniversary of her marriage in 1893), the Queen opened the new buildings of the Bedford College for Women in Regent's Park, having previously inspected the institution. Only the *Mail* reporter noted that an amusing surprise awaited Her Majesty in the psychological section. Two white mice, taking a course in memory training, had just been put in a miniature Hampton Court maze. They were called by the students Pyramus and Thisbe because they were inseparable. The sooner they got through the maze the sooner they enjoyed a meal. The Queen spent five minutes watching their efforts to get out of the maze, tapping on the glass and exclaiming laughingly: "This way; this way." She did not go until the mice had threaded their way through the maze. The Queen was shown some white rats. When she arrived one had just found how to secure a meal by nibbling through a piece of tape that secured a paper cover.

In presenting a gold key to the Queen, Lord Rosebery aptly characterised her as "the titular and cherished head of the womanhood of England" (thoroughly Roseberyan, this).

When their Majesties were visiting Lambton in November, 1913, the Queen inspected the homes for aged miners. Mr. John Wilson, M.P., secretary of the Durham Miners' Association, vividly described the event in the monthly circular of the association:

> When the Queen alighted a feeling of pleasant surprise ran through the whole of the great crowd. The people were expecting to see a stately lady walking through their midst, with majestic fear-striking step, instead of which they saw one of the most handsome women, whose first look at them, with her pleasant smile, drew all hearts to her.
>
> Speaking for myself, knowing little of the ways of the courtier, I was at a loss as to my mode of procedure. I felt confident I should break through all rules of etiquette. I plead guilty to a slight fear and trembling, not so much on personal grounds, but because we, as a class, were on our trial. But from the moment the Queen stepped from the motor, and I was introduced by the Earl of Durham, I felt as if I had known her for years, and as one of our old ladies said afterwards, "She was just like one of the neighbours coming in to see us," or, as one of the onlookers in our own pleasing vernacular said, "She is not like a Queen, she is like one of ourselves."
>
> As we passed along the gardens in front of the Middlestone Moor homes the Queen asked if these were for married people. When told they were, she turned and said, "Can I go into them? I should like to see them." The first house we came to, instead of entering abruptly, she asked, "Can I come into your house a minute?" The reply was, "For four or five, my Queen."
>
> Take her manner in the single men's homes. How friendly she entered two of their rooms, and met the old men, and then, after putting a few questions to them, took a cup of coffee in their dining-room. At Shincliffe I began to be anxious as to her weariness, but as I looked upon her face and saw how happy she appeared to be, and when in kind words (heard only by myself) she asked me, "What shall I see here?" I felt it would limit her happiness if she was not shown nearly all the homes. It was here where the old lady showed the tea-caddy, with Her Majesty's portrait on one side and the King's on the other, and said, "The maister is on the other side." The Queen smiled at the "maister."
>
> And here, too, just about the finish of the visit, were two incidents which indicated her kindness of heart in a most striking manner. We were passing a house the door of which stood open. In a bed right in view lay a woman ill. She was

clean and sweet to look upon, and the door had been left open in order that she might see the Queen as she passed. I was not sure what to do, but said, "There is a woman ill in bed there," and I was for passing on, but was stopped by hearing the tender and low words, "I must go in here," and, entering, Her Majesty went to the bedside and spoke to the woman as to her health and length of illness, and left behind her an influence which would cheer the heart of the patient.

At the end of the street, and just before we got to her motor, a lady sat in a Bath chair, placed on the green some three or four yards from the path. As we approached I saw the hand of the invalid come out from under the cover and reach out towards the Queen. I said, "Your Majesty, here is an invalid lady; she appears desirous of speaking to you." "Where is she?" was the inquiry. I pointed to the corner, and with quick steps the Queen went over the grass and shook her hand, and spoke to her in a most tender manner.

Just a month before they were welcomed by Paris (1914) the Sovereigns visited Cheshire, its shipbuilders, its soapmakers, and its other toilers; thus "following out King George's self-imposed task of reviewing the regiments of England's industrial army," as Mr. G. H. Mumford happily put it. In 1913 their Majesties had gratified Lancashire with a similar visit of inspection, and noted its co-operative stores and building society headquarters. The King's interest in English manufactures was aroused when he and his consort were on their tour in the *Ophir*, and next during their progress in India in 1912. Immediately after their return from India the industrial programme was mapped out.

It began in 1912, with a visit to Cardiff, Merthyr, and Dowlais; the Yorkshire visit followed in July, and in the following year there were the visits to Crewe and the Potteries in April, and to Lancashire in July, when the King and Queen travelled two hundred and thirty miles and saw fifty towns.

King George has gone down the mine more than once, and talked to the miners; he has watched the potter at his wheel, the weaver at his loom, and the ironworker at the forge. He has hewn coal in one of the "abnormal places" in a Yorkshire colliery, has printed calico at Accrington, and decorated a cup at Hanley. He has passed under triumphal arches of coal, cotton, ironwork, and glass. At first hand he has studied the making of the following articles: Iron and steel (Dowlais), coke (Silverwood), railway engines (Crewe), worsted (Huddersfield), soap (Warrington), candles (Warrington), carpets (Halifax), broadcloth (Huddersfield), glass bottles (Barnsley), woollen cloth (Dewsbury), flannelette (Preston), tiles (Stoke), silk (Leek), dyes (Leek), glazes (Hanley), china (Longton), domestic and decorative pottery (Five Towns), wire-rope and steel cables (Wakefield), cotton (Preston), serviettes (Blackburn), weaving machines (Oldham), Wedgwood ware (Hanley), drain-pipes (Five Towns).

The King and Queen have thus been brought into touch with all classes of their subjects. They have talked with chairmen and managing directors, foremen, clerks, and artisans, they have heard romances of secret recipes and patents, they have been told of the improvements since the Mid-Victorian era, when children went to work in the mills at nine and ten years of age, when there were practically no regulations for the safety and health of the workers.

Their Majesties have lunched at country mansions, had tea in a wayside cottage, or, as in one case, at a moorland farm-house, where the good wife brought to mind the story of King Alfred by pressing upon her guests home-made cakes fresh baked at the fire.

Of the crowds who lined the route of the royal motor-car in the Midlands and the North day after day probably 80 per cent. had never previously seen an English Sovereign. Thus the King's plan has delighted great multitudes of his subjects, and the scenes of enthusiasm in Liverpool, Manchester, and elsewhere are not likely to be forgotten.*

Thus in less than four years King George and the

---

* Mr. G. H. Mumford, *Evening News*.

Queen had been seen by millions who had never before set eyes on a King or a Queen.

During his provincial tours of inspection in the autumn of 1914 King George visited Leeds (September 27), whose Lord Mayor met him on his arrival. Driving into the yard of one of the great manufacturing works, where everything is made, from a needle to an anchor, His Majesty was cheered by the employees, who sang "God Save the King." He talked to all and sundry, including a veteran of eighty :

> "Eh ! I am praad to see ye," began the old man when he shook hands with the King. "And," replied His Majesty, "I am glad to see you—and to see you looking so well. How old are you?" "I was eighty last April," confessed the veteran. "And aren't you tired of working yet ? " asked the King. "Not I," came the reply. "I think nowt abaht it, I may look old, but looks doesn't count. It's what one feels."
>
> The King asked another how long he had been working at the foundry, and when he replied : "Fifty-one years, sir," the King held out his hand. "He shook hands right heartily," said the workman afterwards, "and my black, oily hand left a lovely mark right across the King's glove, but he didn't seem to care."

The King's visit to the Leys School (Nonconformist), Cambridge, was one of the simplest and most charming ceremonies that His Majesty had ever been asked to take part in. The occasion (April 30, 1914) was the completion of the great quadrangle, one stone of which had been purposely left unplaced. Within two minutes of King George's entrance through the new gate, Sir Aston Webb handed him a ring. It was a quaint, old-world thing moulded like a big seal, but with St. George and the Dragon rounded in wonderful goldsmith's work on the front of it. Hidden inside was a key, which could be flung out by the touch of a spring. The King opened the lock of a little casket with it, and as the door opened an electrical current set a big crane to work, and the final stone over the gateway found its position.

"That is a beautiful ring. May I keep it ?" said the King. Sir George Hayter Chubb assured him that it was intended for his acceptance. So the King slipped it on his finger. Just as His Majesty was going out, a twinkle came into his eyes, and he left the stately group of masters. Half a dozen quick steps, and he was among the boys. "I'm glad to have seen you, and I have just asked the head master to give you a week's holiday a little later in the year." Then the King got into his motor-car. He fled, but could not escape. The boys broke the rope, streamed through the new gateway, and for nearly two miles the King's car was surrounded by them. Sir George Chubb, referring at the annual speech day to the King's visit to the school, said that almost as soon as His Majesty entered the building he asked if he would have the opportunity of being alone with the boys and speaking with them. This was arranged by the governors at the end of the King's visit.

Many of His Majesty's lieges witnessed a great scene at Aldershot on the 26th of September, 1914, less than two months after the outbreak of war. Nothing of the kind had been seen in the two previous reigns. The King and Queen and Princess Mary were at the great camp for a few days, and on the above date they were the principal figures in a heart-stirring picture, made all the more attractive by the presence of Lord Kitchener. Infantry in training for the first of the new armies were massed on a front extending five miles, and up and down that front walked their Majesties and their daughter, accompanied by "K. of K." and General Hunter. The King often stopped to talk with men who were comparatively old soldiers, as shown by the ribbons of their medals; but these were exceptions. The majority of the men were in their ordinary civil clothes, awaiting their khaki suits. From the Stanhope Lines the royal party motored to the far-spreading Queen's Parade in the North Camp, where a light division was paraded. It was a different and most pleasing spectacle that here presented itself, for the light infantry, which was included in the organisation of the first new Army, was completely uniformed in khaki and fully armed and equipped. On the following day (Sunday) their Majesties and the Princess spent an hour at the Connaught Hospital, and talked to several of the one hundred and eighty-one sick and wounded men; and in the afternoon the King and Queen motored to Farnborough Hill to see the Empress Eugénie.

At one of the munition factories visited by their Majesties, many of the girls said: "Oh, if only the Queen would smile more at us—we thought she'd be sure to smile! I've heard she's got a beautiful smile!" Some one pointed out that Her Majesty must be very tired after a week's tour of factories. At once, says Miss Beatrice Heron-Maxwell, the girls were all sympathy, and a charge-hand explained to the others near: "You can't expect her to be smiling all the time after the work she's done this week. Why, two weeks' night-work for us on end would be a joke to what she and the King got through this week." So when their Majesties did smile the cheers were trebly enthusiastic!

A scene at the "Court" held at Buckingham Palace on June 4, 1914, brought the "militant" women into well-deserved loathing and contempt. Several of these persons, with what looked like orthodox "commands" in their hands, attempted to gain admittance to the Palace, but the documents upon examination were found to be forged, and their bearers were promptly "shown out." Among those who received invitations ("commands") to this "Court" were Lady Blomfield (widow of the well-known architect, Sir Arthur) and her two daughters, Mary and Eleanor. The young ladies did not accompany their mother, but followed her to the Palace. One of them was kneeling before the King when the salon rang with her ejaculation: "Your Majesty, for God's sake stop torturing women!"

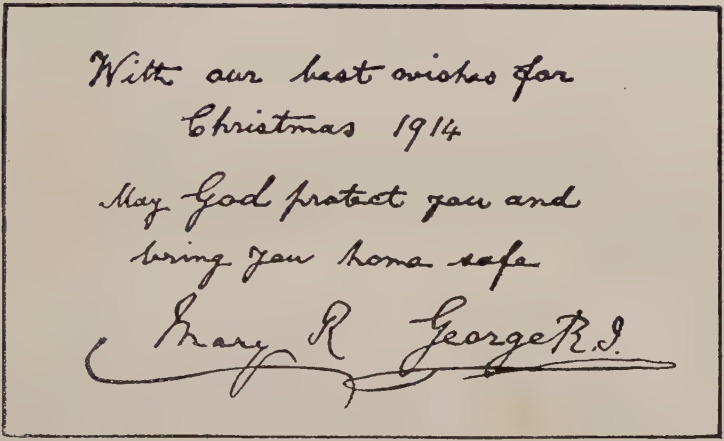
The offender was still on her knees, gazing fixedly at the Sovereign, when Sir Douglas Dawson, comptroller in the Lord Chamberlain's Department, stepped forward and, laying his hand on the young woman's arm, led her outside. Five seconds later everything was proceeding as if nothing untoward had happened. Throughout the scene the King and Queen maintained their composure, keeping their eyes fixed straight ahead. The two sisters were shown to their car, and at once drove home. Meanwhile the news of the outrage had spread. On the following evening the girls' mother furnished this explanation of the event: "Lady Blomfield desires to state that her daughters did not accompany her to the Court on June 4, but arrived later without her knowledge. The appeal was entirely Miss Blomfield's own idea. Lady Blomfield saw nothing of the incident, which she and the whole family deeply deplore. Lady Blomfield wishes further to state that she is in no way connected with the militant suffragettes." The offender and her sister had been ardent "suffs," leaders of processions, and so on, but for some months previous to the perpetration of the outrage at the Palace they had not taken a very active part in the antics of the fair "militants." Inquiries proved them to be granddaughters of Dr. Blomfield, a former well-known Bishop of London. As an architect their father had enjoyed the confidence of King Edward, who frequently consulted him.

A second (and last) Court was held on the following evening (June 5), when an extra force of police guarded the Palace, and no one was allowed to remain in front of the Royal residence. On one side of the Palace a crowd gathered, including many women wearing suffragette colours. Against these a detective took his stand. Once or twice attempts were made to cross the road, but unsuccessfully. One of the guests of their Majesties said the Court passed off without any untoward incident. Increased precautions were taken, and all women known to have suffragist sympathies were excluded from the invitations.

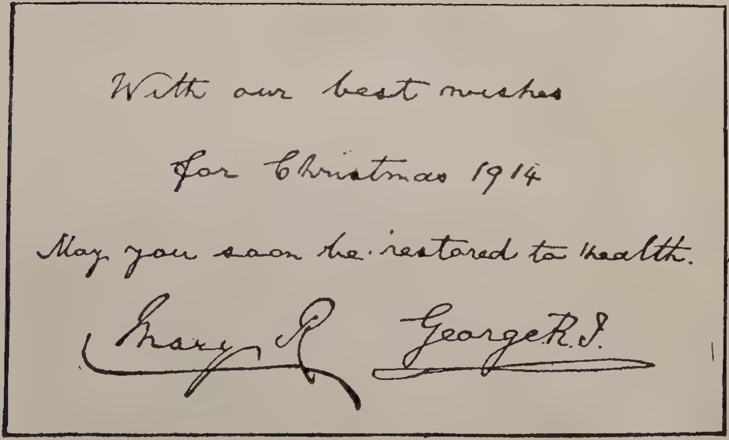
On the day after the "scene" Miss Eva Moore presided at a meeting of the Actresses' Franchise League, held at the Arts Club, and, alluding to what had occurred at the Palace, said whether those she addressed were or were not "militants" did not matter. They must all take their hats off to the woman who showed such terrific courage. It was said that the only people who were apparently unmoved were the King and Queen. People should not try to make the populace believe that the King and Queen were minus heart. She felt that such an action as that which took place at the Palace must enormously help the cause, because the King and Queen knew then, if they did not know before, that the women meant business. She urged them to continue to agitate strenuously.

Our first War Christmas was in 1914; we are now approaching our fourth (1917), and we may see a fifth. The Empire will always hold King George and Queen Mary—yes, and Princess Mary, too—in loving remembrance for what they did in 1914. During that Yuletide every officer and man serving the colours, afloat or ashore, received from the Sovereigns a Christmas card of greeting, each bearing a facsimile of their Majesties' handwriting. It was the celebrated firm of Messrs. W. and D. Downey, Ebury Street, that the King commissioned to prepare the cards, and right well did those artists carry out the gigantic order. The card was in three forms—(1) for the Navy, (2) for the Army, and (3) for the poor wounded. It bore a lifelike portrait of the Queen, showing Her Majesty wearing a crown of diamonds and other magnificent jewels within a design of fleurs-de-lis and the croix pattée. For naval distribution His Majesty is seen in the uniform of Admiral of the Fleet. The King gave a special sitting in khaki uniform for the portrait that went to the Army, and it was a most excellent one.

The King wrote in his clear, plain handwriting



With our best wishes for
Christmas 1914
May God protect you and
bring you home safe
Mary R George R.I.



With our best wishes
for Christmas 1914
May you soon be restored to health.
Mary R George R.I.

Facsimiles of Christmas Cards sent by Their Majesties to our Land and Sea Forces in 1914

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

the greetings that went forth, signing the card also. To this the Queen added her own autograph, and the inscription ran as follows for the Navy and Army:

> With our best wishes for
> Christmas, 1914.
> May God protect you and
> bring you home safe.
> Mary R. George R.I.

In its third form the portraits on the card were the same, but the words ran:

> With our best wishes for
> Christmas, 1914.
> May you soon be restored to health.
> Mary R. George R.I.

Every card was sent in a special envelope bearing the Royal arms in rich dark crimson. The cards and envelopes weighed, in all, over eight tons and were contained in one hundred and eighty huge packing-cases.

Princess Mary sent to every man at the same festive time a tobacco-box.

Let it not be forgotten that King George's revered grandmother sent a box of chocolate to all our men who were fighting the Boers in South Africa at Christmas, 1899.

I have already mentioned, in passing, the Brobdingnagian efforts of Her Majesty on behalf of the troops, and I will now put on record Lady Lawley's short account of the two organisations (Queen Mary's Needlework Guild and the Queen's Work for Women Fund) which for over three years have been ceaselessly toiling, under Her Majesty's personal direction, at St. James's Palace and at Devonshire

House, in collecting and supplying clothing and comforts for our heroic defenders. These particulars were supplied by Lady Lawley at the end of January, 1915:

At Devonshire House, before Christmas, a special collection of socks and belts was made to the number of 970,000, and these were sent as a present from the Queen and the women of the Empire to our soldiers at the Front.

That organisation is now closed, and it is considered better that in future any comforts required by the men on active service, supplemental to the War Office issue, should be supplied direct from the Queen Mary's Needlework Guild.

The guild was initiated by Her Majesty the moment war broke out, and is still actively engaged in the collection and distribution of clothing of all kinds.

From all parts of the Empire, from every continent, from the United States of America, and from every country where English is spoken gifts of clothes have been forthcoming in generous measure. No fewer than 789,562 garments have been received and 711,949 distributed in five months.

A constant distribution has been maintained, and for some weeks past it has varied from 21,000 to 50,000 a week.

The following have, among others, been the recipients:

517 regiments—327,626 garments.
176 hospitals at home—52,361 garments.
123 hospitals abroad—93,263 garments.
Indian Fund—11,097 garments.
Royal Navy—34,230 garments.
15 camps—16,895 garments.
Forces in South Africa—1882 garments.
Forces in East Africa—3000 garments.
Forces in Egypt—9900 garments.
Allied forces—11,154 garments.

Requisitions for warm clothes are received daily, and I would earnestly urge upon the public the necessity for continued generosity on their part, and appeal to them for further supplies of garments to the Queen's Guild, which has been the object of Her Majesty's constant interest and care since the beginning of the war.

All parcels should be addressed: Friary Court, St. James's Palace."

The Queen's Work for Women Fund has for its object the finding of employment for women and girls thrown out of work by the war. It has been from the outset a huge success, thanks to its administration by the Central Committee on Women's Employment. In the first three months of its existence in 1914 £86,551 had been subscribed!

In a letter to the Queen the late Lord Kitchener wrote:

> War Office, *November* 30, 1914.
>
> Madam,—I have the pleasure to inform your Majesty that the whole of the "gift from the Queen and women of England" has reached France, and that careful instructions have been given as to the distribution of the belts and socks. I would take this opportunity of thanking your Majesty and all those who worked under your direction for the generosity and energy which marked this valuable contribution to the comfort of the troops. I have the honour to be your Majesty's most obedient and dutiful servant,
>
> Kitchener.

Their Majesties' and Princess Mary's visit (in August, 1915) to the wounded Indian soldiers then in the military hospitals at Brighton was thus described in the *Indiaman*:

> In the morning the King and Queen and the Princess Mary had visited the Kitchener Hospital, where they talked to some of the poor, brave fellows who have shattered themselves for the sacred cause. In one ward a soldier was sleeping, as wounded, tired men do sleep, and the King asked that he should not be disturbed. Yet the officer in charge of the ward awakened him, "For he would never forgive me," he said, "if I had let him sleep on." The man awoke with a smile in his dazed eyes, and when the interpreter told him that it was the King, the soldier said, "Thank God, I can tell them in my village that he stood by my bed."
>
> It was very Oriental at the Pavilion. It was royal weather, and the sun smiled on its children from the East. They sat silent in quiet beatitude, feasting their eyes on their King-

Emperor. From the distant kitchens, which were visited by their Majesties, where Brahmin Sepoys testified to the excellence of the food, came the faint fragrance of the spices and the turmeric which always conjures up the East. From behind the Pavilion came the chant of the Sikhs at their prayers; and the prayer at the Pavilion, as at the Kitchener Hospital, where the King and Queen had listened to the reverent worshippers of the Khalsa, was for victory for King George.

More Oriental still, however, was the time-honoured Indian custom of the personal petition to the Emperor. The time was short, but the King's experience in India moved him to listen patiently to two Sepoys who, greatly daring, took this opportunity of approaching the Presence. Said the first:

"My brother and I were both wounded, and came to England. They told him I was dead, and he went mad. But I was not dead, and the Sahib took me to see him. He became sane, and we both wept. But next day he went mad again, and said it was a dream and an illusion. And he has gone back to India, while I—well, I gave six shillings to an Indian writing man to buy me something in the bazaar, and the writing man—they are all accursed, these writing men—he took my six shillings and will not give them back."

"This," said the King, "is a serious matter, and shall be looked into."

It is a promise, and the petitioner falls back content, for he knows that the English keep promises.

The second petitioner had lost two brothers at the Front, and it behoves him to return to his village to settle the affairs of his family. This, too, shall receive consideration. Whatever may be the decision, the Sepoy is content, for the King has listened, with his kind smile, as the petition was translated to him.

"He is a listener," says the Sepoy as the Royal party passes on. "All we want in India is a listener. You saw," said he to the others, who wondered at his forwardness, "you saw that he listened, and that is enough."

In thousands and ten thousands of villages, in the little square under the banyan-tree, the story of this day will be told by honoured soldiers who have fought for and have seen the King.

Only those in uniform know the extent of the part the King has played in our war work—of the reviews of armies, his continual series of visits to camps, dockyards, works and hospitals, and the entertainments to the wounded at Buckingham Palace and elsewhere. Very few divisions have "gone out" without a God-speed from him. In the Home Counties these royal visits have made a tradition. In Surrey, places are pointed out where the King mounted, or lunched, or talked with his generals before going to the point where he reviewed the troops. A lady wrote of one of these events in 1915:

> Yesterday was a red-letter day—such excitement! The King and Queen and Princess Mary came to the village to review troops on the common. You've no idea what a perfect picture the little school green with the chestnut-tree looked with the gilded staff, Sir Archibald Hunter and other generals, soldiers and grooms, all leisurely waiting—no horrid police—the King's mount ready for him. He mounted there, and so did the Princess, and they started off down the church lane, the King surrounded by his warriors, a tiny Royal Standard carried by a trooper in front of him, the beautiful horses, the bits of scarlet on the khaki. I'll never think of the village again as I used to. It's a bit of the history of the great war now.*

The scene on a hill on a heath near the River Wey is described in the same journal by another pen:

> The soldiers had been busy all the day before making a new road through the heather, partly by burning it. When the King and Queen and Princess Mary came in their motor the tramping of thousands of men in the burnt parts had set up a dense black dust, and nothing could be seen. Some official genius had got two red plush chairs from somewhere, and they were taken up to the top of the little hill (you remember the rabbits there!) and placed for the Queen and the Princess. I don't wonder that after they looked at the chairs, which were black by that time, they decided to stay in the motor. The troops passed over the golf course, but it made no difference.

---

* *Manchester Guardian.*

Nobody plays now. The professional told Jim that 140 out of the 321 members are among the killed and wounded.

The official Court Circular dated September 23, 1916, announced: "The King and Queen desire to convey their sincere thanks to every one who kindly assisted in entertaining their Majesties' guests at the three parties given with such pleasure by the King and Queen to wounded sailors and soldiers during the week in the Royal Mews at Buckingham Palace. Their Majesties wish to include in this expression of their gratitude all those, in whatsoever capacity, who thus generously placed their services at the disposal of the King and Queen."

This gracious message of thanks to all and sundry referred to the three tea-parties given during the week by their Majesties at Buckingham Palace Mews to wounded soldiers and sailors, who were waited upon, as they told their friends, by Royalties and other "swells." Queen Mary and her daughter attended two of the gatherings and "handed" the good things to the guests. Among the helpers were Queen Amélie of Portugal, the Princess Royal, with Princess Maud, Princess Arthur of Connaught, Princess Christian, the Duchess of Teck, the Duchess of Albany, Princess Louise Duchess of Argyll, Princess Alexander of Teck, Prince Albert, the Duchess of Devonshire and Lady Maud Cavendish, the Duchess of Sutherland, the Duchess of Buccleuch, Lady Lansdowne, the Marquise d'Hautpoul, Lady Maud Warrender, Lady Allendale, Lady Sandhurst, and many others. Sir John Lister Kaye, who, with Lady Lister Kaye, was helping at Princess Victoria's table, is President of the Motor Transport

Volunteer Corps, and his motor transport buses took the guests to and from the Palace. The Canadians' invitation cards were signed by Queen Alexandra, who smilingly declared that she had not given away so many autographs in "all my life" as at that one sitting. The lucky Canadians were seen comparing cards with their signatures, and admiring the neat large handwriting of the Royal lady.

Their Majesties left London on Sunday evening, May 13, 1917, on a tour of inspection of the industrial north-west counties, making the train their home throughout the journey. The centres visited were Liverpool, Birkenhead, Manchester, Lancaster, Barrow-in-Furness, Workington, and Carlisle (June 18). They left the latter place for Sedburgh, where they inspected the Sedburgh School Officers' Training Corps, and arrived at Buckingham Palace on the 19th, in the morning. The most attractive account of the tour appeared in the *Daily Express*, from the pen of one who made the journey.

> The tour [he wrote *en route*] partakes very much of the character of a real picnic. From point to point the tourists are wandering in a palace on wheels—a royal caravan—just as though they were a pair of super-gipsies with no thought beyond the next stopping-place. The journey is being made in the famous royal train built by the London and North Western Railway Company at their Wolverton works for King Edward VII, and until Saturday it will be as much the "home" of the King and Queen as Windsor Castle or Buckingham Palace. Their Majesties sleep on board the train each night, and their programme is so arranged that most of their meals are eaten in the dining saloon. Wherever the stopping-place for the night, there the royal standard is hoisted.
>
> The train is made up of eight or nine coaches with a total weight of 470 tons, and between fifty and sixty individuals sleep on board each night. While to the onlooker the train appears to wander where it will, there is in fact nothing hap-

hazard about the journey. Much serious care and thought have been devoted by a host of railway officials to the task of piloting and safeguarding the royal party throughout their week of picturesque travel. Wherever the royal train may be resting for the moment, you will see anxious railway officials consulting carefully prepared typewritten schedules full of minute details as to times, routes, passengers, and a hundred and one other things known to the expert in railway lore.

The railway staff of the train, including driver, fireman, guards, and attendants, are all old and trusted servants of the company. Most of them have travelled with the train or its predecessors on many previous occasions. The guard in charge during its journey in the Manchester division, for instance, has been “ guarding royal trains for thirty-seven years, and remembers journeys with Queen Victoria and King Edward.

So far as the personal comfort of their Majesties is concerned, the duty of safeguarding it lies with the equerry in waiting, Commander Sir Charles Cust. The heaviest burden, however, of the multitudinous details that are constantly arising during such a journey falls on the shoulders of Lieut.-Colonel Clive Wigram and his assistant, the Earl of Cromer, with their staff of secretaries, who have an office to themselves in one of the saloons.

In the last week of June, 1917, the Queen and Princess Mary were mingling with London’s humblest women and children. At a communal kitchen at Stepney they served all comers with “ two penn’orths ” of this and that and picked up the “ tuppences ” as if it were all a part of their daily work. There were confidences, too. Mrs. Smith, a seamstress, told the Queen in a whisper that she had worked on her consort’s baby-dress half a century ago. So Mrs. Smith was interviewed, as thus :

> I always said that whenever I had the chance of a word with the King or the Queen, I’d tell them about it. Fancy me, at my time of life, meeting Her Majesty and having a word with her, after waiting all these years and years ! I think the

Queen's fine; and as for Princess Mary, she's a dear! To see how she nipped about with them plates. . . . I *never* did!

Mrs. Abercromby is another proud Stepneyite who has figured in print. She owns a Queen Victoria's Diamond Jubilee jug, and on Stepney's great day she took it to Queen Mary and tremblingly asked for two penn'orth of soup. "The Queen took the jug," said Mrs. Abercromby, "and handed it to Princess Mary, and said 'one soup,' just like that, and the Princess handed it to Princess Christian; and then it passed back again through the hands of two Royal Princesses and one Queen; and the Queen says to me as she spiked my ticket, 'What a handsome jug!' And now it's at home safe again. Do you think I'd part from it after that? No—not for its weight in gold!"

"Old Mother Morris," as her neighbours affectionately call her, is over eighty, a widow, and an old-age pensioner. She, too, "had a word with the Queen," who sold her a meat pie.

On another day in that ever-to-be-remembered June week the Queen and her daughter went to the National Economy Exhibition at the new County Hall in Westminster Bridge Road. Here a number of little girls, coming from Salvation Army Homes, sang to Her Majesty:

> I think when I read that sweet story of old
> When Jesus was here among men.

"Queen Mary," I read, "was obviously touched by the sweet, shrill voices, and patted the curly head of the youngest pink-cheeked baby as she inquired her age. Bertie, a Montessori student of some three years, absorbed in his play-task at the other side of the room, refused to deliver up the picture-card which he was to present to the Queen. Her Majesty tried a little persuasion, but finally had to leave him with his treasure."

In the food-production department the demonstrator explained how the fruit from cottage gardens can be preserved by the sulphur process until sugar is forthcoming. "I hope you understand," concluded the demonstrator, addressing the women who were gathered round prior to the Queen's unexpected entry. "Did you?" the Queen smilingly asked the women, as she turned to ask the demonstrator if one of the fruit-canners could be sent to Buckingham Palace. The munition crèche and the mothercraft section were shown to Her Majesty, who pointed out to her Lady in Waiting the merits of an impromptu cradle for a cottage home which had been manufactured from a sugar-box and a "Pilgrim" basket.

A dietary, with samples, which it is unwise to give to a baby under three, but which is evidently the accepted thing in some quarters, caught the Queen's eye. Here were pickles, gooseberries, and fried potatoes, and the Queen shook her head as she looked at the little dishes in which the vicious food was exhibited. Much more hopeful was the apparatus which ensures pure milk. The Queen examined this thoroughly, and called Princess Mary's attention to it.

Wounded Australian soldiers from the 1st London Hospital happened to be visiting the exhibition, and the Queen stopped to speak to them, and soldiers from King George's Hospital who had lost an eye also received the Queen's sympathy. In the French Market Her Majesty saw a demonstration of cookery by the French *chef* of polenta and ling-fish, and risotto.

"We are showing how to use less white flour," said the *chef*, and the Queen laughed. "We cannot get it," she said. The Queen inquired carefully into the fuel economy effected by the "Ever-ready" ranges, asking how much fuel was saved in a week. The model babies in "Mothercraft" drew from the Queen the exclamation, "How beautiful!" and she examined the little slippers made from scraps of material. In the Women's National Service Section the Queen felt the material of a coat worn by a land-girl and asked if it was warm enough in the winter. To girls of the Women's Land Army she said how pleased she was that so many had gone to France. Then she had tea in the artists' room, cakes for which were baked at the L.C.C. Women's Institutes, and took the recipes for rice bread, maize scones, oatmeal biscuits, and shortbread.

The Queen was quite in her element when, on July 2, 1917, accompanied by Princess Mary, she opened the National Baby Week Exhibition in the great hall close to Westminster Abbey. Her Majesty went into the hall between a bodyguard of mothers with babies. More than one baby attempted to snatch a big pearl and diamond brooch which the Queen wore, and her diamond ear-rings also proved an irresistible attraction to little fingers. "His father's never seen him, ma'am," said one mother in answer to the Queen. "He's in the trenches." "Dear little thing," said the Queen. "I hope father will soon come home safe and sound. He will be proud to see you."

Mrs. H. B. Irving carried to the Queen a chubby two-months baby from St. Pancras. Another baby was presented to Her Majesty by Mrs. Parker, sister of Lord Kitchener. The babies included six sets of triplets. One of the mothers, Mrs. Phillips, of Hoys Street, Tidal Basin, had had nineteen children, including two sets of triplets, and her husband and son are fighting in France. Nearly every mother had her own special word from the Queen, and every little hand was tenderly touched by her.

Children are no respecters of persons, and from the crowd of babies it was natural that some cries should be heard. A little girl, who refused to be presented to the Queen, asked to be taken down when she was perched on a stall to show the neat "crawler" which the girls of the Jewish Sick Help Society had made. But there was a happy baby who handed a bunch of sweet peas to the Queen, and another who insisted on playing with the Royal parasol. At the opening Her Majesty held in her arms little Sydney Howard, of Rochester Road, St. Pancras, who was two months old that day.

On June 13, 1917, the day the enemy raided London, there was a notable "investiture" at Buckingham Palace. Immediately after the ceremony the King's auto took His Majesty (accompanied by Lord Cromer) to the devastated districts, which were thoroughly inspected. In the East End the crowds hailed him with appreciative cheers. The sufferers from the Huns' shells were successively visited at St. Bartholomew's and the London Hospitals. A very "live" reporter * supplied his enterprising paper with the detailed "story" here recorded, as told him by the secretary of the London Hospital:

> The King was splendid (said Mr. Morris). We had notice of his coming ten minutes before, and he had previously visited St. Bartholomew's. Despite the fact that His Majesty was busily arranging to go to the North a few hours later he stayed in the hospital quite a long time and passed from ward to ward, taking the most sympathetic interest in all the patients.
>
> On leaving one ward he would say, "Now I think I should like to see another ward," and so he went from ward to ward,

---

* *Daily Express*, June 14, 1917.

talking with every patient and bidding them cheer up, as they were in a place where they would receive the very kindest and most skilled attention.

Coming to a bed that was screened off, His Majesty looked over the top of the screen, and saw that an operation was being performed on the knee of an injured man. The surgeon apologised to the King that he could not stop, but must go on.

" May I come round ? " said the King. The surgeon said he could, and for several minutes His Majesty watched the operation with the most sympathetic interest.

A great many of the patients were too ill to recognise their distinguished visitors, but those who could were greatly delighted and relieved in their sufferings by the gentle way in which the King addressed them. To one he would say, " Cheer up, I am quite sure you are out of all danger ; " to another, " Ah, you have had very bad luck, my man, to be bruised in that manner, but it is astonishing what wonderful things the nurses and surgeons can do in this hospital, and though your sufferings are very great for the moment you will get better every day and soon get quite well again, probably not in any way disfigured."

The King spoke to each of the Sisters, encouraging them in their good work, and making it very clear to every one that he knew how arduous their labours were on such an occasion. Meeting a man with a bandaged head going up the stairs from one ward to another, he stopped him and asked him how he came by his injuries, what he was doing at the time, whether the bomb fell near him, and whether he had received a great shock to his nerves. The man was able to give a detailed description which astonished the King by its clearness in the circumstances.

His Majesty made a great point of this in talking to the men. He seemed to be particularly anxious to know exactly how they were situated when the bomb fell near them, and one imagined that he had in his mind the problem whether there is greater danger in small buildings or large buildings, and whether cover is safer than the open street.

His last words to me in parting were : " I have just come from St. Bartholomew's Hospital, where I have seen some very sad sights, especially among the young victims. Those dear children ! I saw one whose right eye had been terribly damaged by a flying fragment from a German bomb."

" They will do anything—anything ! " said the King.

> At the moment (concluded Mr. Morris), we have thirty-one dead in the mortuary and seventy lie in the wards, some of whom, I am afraid, will die in the night. Altogether, we treated one hundred and twenty cases who were able and anxious to go to their homes.

At 5 p.m. their Majesties were in the train *en route* to the north-eastern counties. Before their departure the Queen sent a large quantity of flowers to the hospitals. These bore the inscription: "Buckingham Palace. With the Queen's deepest sympathy with the sufferers through the air raid." The flowers were taken to the sufferers and the message read to those whose condition was not dangerous.

While the King was cheering the victims at the two great hospitals, his illustrious mother was bestowing her sympathy upon many of the parents whose children had been barbarously done to death by the Kaiser's executioners.

On June 25, the Queen and Princess Mary visited three hospitals—Bartholomew's, the London, and the Poplar—and presented gifts of all kinds to ninety-eight victims of the air raid on the 13th, when 104 men, women, and children were killed and 423 injured.

Since July 2, 1917, there has been a Queen Mary Club for Officers, located in Eaton Square, and opened by Princess Patricia of Connaught. The club so happily named after the "People's Queen" is managed by the Y.M.C.A., and it could not be in better hands. There are eighty bedrooms and several bathrooms, with a constant supply of hot water. A large apartment is furnished with divan chairs, writing-tables, and reading-chairs. There is

H.R.H. PRINCESS MARY
(ONLY DAUGHTER OF THEIR MAJESTIES
THE KING AND QUEEN)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

a delightful ingle-nook and chimney corner, which will be appreciated when the garden attached to the club becomes less attractive than the fireside. The dining-room is furnished with small tables, and meals can be obtained at any hour of the day or night. Plain breakfast costs 1s.; a more substantial one 2s.; table d'hôte lunch 1s. 6d. or 2s.; dinner 2s. 6d., and tea 6d. Lucky, indeed, are those who obtain membership of this club, which is known as "Queen Mary's Own." The necessity for such an institution was illustrated on the opening day by Sir Francis Lloyd, who declared that some officers on the way through London had been unable to find sleeping places and consequently had to pass the night in passages!

At Westminster Abbey on July 2, 1917, the King and Queen and Queen Alexandra attended the service in commemoration of the fiftieth anniversary of the Confederation of Canada. The King, in khaki, sat in the sacrarium between the Queen and Queen Alexandra. Queen Alexandra, who arrived first, "put her hand with an affectionate gesture on the King's shoulder as she made way for him to reach his chair." Princess Mary and Princess Victoria sat behind. The Archbishop of Canterbury, assuming no robes, occupied a stall in the choir.

Canadian soldiers and nurses and others celebrated the day at the "Home Church" of Canadian Presbyterians in London—St. Columba's, Pont Street. Lieut.-Colonel William Beattie, Director of Canadian Chaplains in England, who preached, told how the name "Dominion of Canada" was chosen at the time of confederation. After leaving the Council Sir Leonard Tilley opened the Bible at Psalm lxxii, his eye resting on the verse: "He shall have dominion also from sea to sea. . . ." A vision of Canada "from sea to sea" came to him, and he felt that "Dominion" was the right word. "Sentiment for the Throne is strong in Canada," said Dr. Beattie. "The Sovereign is essential to the imperial idea. Given a Republic here, the Empire would be disintegrated."

King George's Fund for Sailors, an outcome of the war, was inaugurated at the Mansion House on July 6, 1917, when the Lord Mayor announced that His Majesty had been pleased to command that the fund should bear his name. It is incorporated under Royal Charter on the lines of King Edward's Hospital Fund, the object being to promote more efficient aid and support for the marine benevolent institutions of the kingdom. The Duke of Connaught is chairman of the council; Prince Albert is president of the fund (his first public office, I think), and gave £100 to it; and up to July the total contributions amounted to over £26,000. Admiral Sir John Jellicoe told some delightful stories of gallant fights by our Royal Navy men and those of our mercantile marine, and Sir E. Carson (then First Lord of the Admiralty) made references to King George which his hearers lustily cheered. "The other day [said Sir Edward] the Prime Minister stated truly that there was no harder-worked man in the Empire at the present time than His Majesty. His concern for the welfare of his subjects was undoubted, but that he had devoted himself whole-heartedly to the care of those who were making sacrifices for the country in this war was a matter which he hoped the public in general thoroughly realised. There were revolutions in other countries, but he believed that the war, which had brought all the units of our vast Dominions together, had increased the ever-growing affection and loyalty of the Empire towards the King. And the reason was not difficult to see, because never had there reigned on any throne a more constitutional monarch than King George."

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER XII

THE KING ABOLISHES GERMAN TITLES AND FOUNDS THE ROYAL HOUSE AND FAMILY OF WINDSOR

> The King stands for England, and speaks with the voice of the English people throughout the world with an authority which no statesman, however eminent, can wield.
>
> It was wisely said of King George at his accession, and in this work is endorsed with full consciousness of its accuracy: "Few Sovereigns ever ascended the Throne with less inclination for the merely external pomp and circumstance of their high position. But in all that affects the good of his country and the maintenance of its influence in the council-room of the world, the new Monarch will be found as devoted to the Empire's service as any in the long roll of his Royal predecessors."

The Court Circular dated June 19, 1917, and published on the following day, contained this announcement fixing the status of Princesses Victoria and Marie Louise of Schleswig-Holstein under the new order of things:

The King has been pleased to direct that Royal Warrants shall be prepared declaring that their Highnesses Princess Victoria and Princess Marie Louise of Schleswig-Holstein shall henceforth be styled their Highnesses Princess Helena Victoria and Princess Marie Louise respectively, and whereas the Princesses of the Royal Family who bear the title of Duchess of Saxony and who are his subjects have at His Majesty's desire relinquished the said title, he has been also pleased to direct that Royal Warrants shall be prepared declaring their present styles and making such corresponding alteration in their arms as may be necessary.

These ladies are the daughters of Princess Helena (third daughter of Queen Victoria) by her marriage with Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein in 1866. Princess Victoria was born in May 1870, and Princess Marie Louise in August 1872. The latter was married in July 1891, to Prince Aribert of Anhalt, but the marriage was dissolved in 1900. The elder brother of the Princesses, Christian Victor, served in Ashanti and in South Africa, and died at Pretoria in 1900. The younger brother, Prince Albert, who was a G.C.V.O. and a G.C.B., lives at Potsdam, and is one of the enemy princes serving against England in the war.

On the same date (June 19) the Press Bureau circulated the appended announcement, which was made known to the public through the Press on the 20th :

The King has deemed it desirable in the conditions brought about by the present war that those Princes of his family who are his subjects and bear German names and titles should relinquish these titles and henceforth adopt British surnames.

At the same time, and consequent upon this decision, His Majesty has been graciously pleased to confer peerages of the United Kingdom on the following:

The Duke of Teck, a Marquis; Prince Alexander of Teck, an Earl; Prince Louis of Battenberg, a Marquis; Prince Alexander of Battenberg, a Marquis.

These personages are dealt with in detail in other chapters, but, for ready reference, these particulars will be serviceable.

The Duke of Teck is Queen Mary's brother. He was born at Kensington Palace in 1868, the son of the Duke of Teck and Princess Mary Adelaide, daughter of the first Duke of Cambridge. He is married to a daughter of the first Duke of Westminster. Having seen service in South Africa, he was appointed Assistant Military Secretary at the War Office in 1915. He has been Governor and Constable of Windsor Castle since 1914.

Prince Alexander of Teck is younger brother of the Duke of Teck, and was also born at Kensington Palace. He served with the Royal Horse Guards in the South African Campaign, and also in the present war on the Western Front, being mentioned in dispatches. He is married to Princess Alice of Albany.

Prince Louis of Battenberg was born in 1854 at Gratz, Austria, the eldest son of Prince Alexander of Hesse, morganatically married. He was naturalized as a British subject in 1868, when he entered the Royal Navy, in which he had a distinguished career, rising to the rank of Admiral. He was First Sea Lord when the war broke out, and resigned in October 1914, in consequence of a campaign waged against him in a section of the Press because of his parentage. He married his cousin, Princess

Victoria, daughter of Princess Alice and granddaughter of Queen Victoria. His younger brother, the late Prince Henry of Battenberg, a victim of the Ashantee campaign, was married to Princess Beatrice, King George's aunt, who voluntarily abandoned her Battenberg title several weeks prior to the King's sweeping changes.

Prince Alexander of Battenberg is a son of Princess Beatrice and the late Prince Henry of Battenberg. Born in 1886, he served first in the Royal Navy, and afterwards, in 1915, with the Grenadier Guards in the European War. His youngest brother, Prince Maurice, was killed in action in France in October 1914.

The Tecks' and the Battenbergs' New Titles

It was officially announced on June 27 that the King had approved of the following titles being adopted :

The Duke of Teck...... Marquis of Cambridge.
Prince Alexander of Teck......Earl of Athlone.
Prince Louis of Battenberg.........Marquis of Milford Haven.
Prince Alexander of Battenberg.....Marquis of Carisbrooke.

The King has been pleased to direct that Royal Warrants shall be prepared granting authority—

1. To Colonel His Highness the Duke of Teck and his descendants and other descendants of his father, Major-General His Highness the late Duke of Teck, to assume the surname of Cambridge.

2. To Admiral His Serene Highness Prince Louis of Battenberg and his descendants and such other

descendants of his father, His Grand Ducal Highness the late Prince Alexander of Hesse, as are British subjects to assume the surname of MOUNTBATTEN.

Her Grand Ducal Highness Princess Louis of Battenberg, granddaughter of Queen Victoria and daughter of the late Princess Alice, is, with the King's consent, abandoning her rank and title due to her, being a Princess of Hesse, and wishes to be known only as Marchioness of Milford Haven.

Prince Louis's heir, Prince George, is now known as the Earl of Medina; his son, Prince Louis Francis of Battenberg, midshipman, has become Lord Louis Mountbatten; and his daughter, Princess Louise of Battenberg, Lady Louise Mountbatten. Queen of Swed

Milford Haven is one of the dormant Royal titles of 1706, in which year it was assumed by Prince George, afterwards King George II. Milford Haven is closely associated with the Royal Navy. The former Prince Louis of Battenberg's second title, Earl of Medina, is taken from the river Medina, in the Isle of Wight. Near by is Kent House, the old residence of the Duchess of Kent, Queen Victoria's mother, and now owned by the Battenberg family. The Marquis of Milford Haven's third title, Baron Alderney, is also (added the *Times*) a dormant title, borne in 1726 by one of the sons of King George III. The new Marquis's son and daughter-in-law, the Earl and Countess of Athlone, reside in Henry III Tower, Windsor Castle.

The Duchess of Teck is Marchioness of Cambridge.

Princess Alexander of Teck—Princess Alice, Countess of Athlone. Before her marriage she was Princess of Albany.

The son (Prince Rupert) of the Earl and Countess of Athlone is Viscount Trematon; and their daughter (Princess May) is Lady May Cambridge ("Cambridge" being the former Duke of Teck's surname).

The Earl of Medina was present on board the *New Zealand* at the Battle of Jutland.

"Mountbatten," now the family name of the former Prince Louis of Battenberg, is derived from the little headland which overlooks the old eastern harbour at Plymouth from whence Drake sailed. It has been erroneously stated that "Mountbatten" is only an English translation of the German or Austrian title "Battenberg."

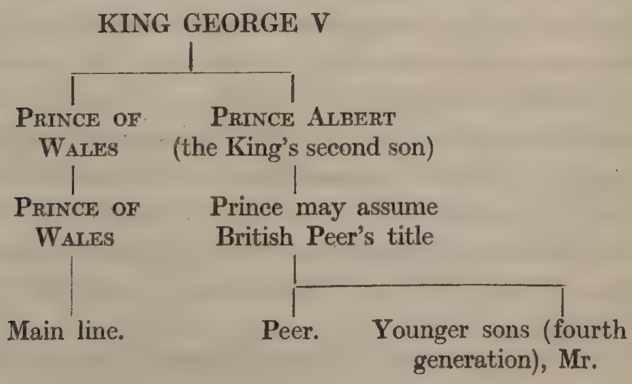
Princess Louis Francis of Battenberg (wife of Louis Francis) is Lady Louise Mountbatten.

(Edwina Ashley)

FROM PRINCE AND PRINCESS TO MR. AND MRS.

On June 29, 1917, I wrote in the *Daily Mail*:

His Majesty's recent alterations in the nomenclature of the Houses of Teck and Battenberg have naturally caused much speculation as to the names which may be taken by our Royal Princes. I venture to offer this possible solution:


KING GEORGE V
PRINCE OF WALES
PRINCE ALBERT (the King's second son)
PRINCE OF WALES
Prince may assume British Peer's title
Main line.
Peer.
Younger sons (fourth generation), Mr.

My view that the younger sons (of the fourth generation) will bear no title, but will be simply "Mr." So-and-So (whatever the Royal family name might then be), was confirmed three weeks later by the *Times* in its leading article,* which contained the following passage: "This [the King's Declaration] is a more democratic step than is apparent on the surface. It means that the male descendants of the Sovereign will be commoners in the third generation, with a courtesy title as the sons of Dukes, *and plain Mr. Windsor in the fourth generation.*"

Let me put it still more explicitly: the "great-great" grandsons of the Chief Magistrate of the British Empire will each be "Mr." When written to, the envelope will be addressed to "So-and-So, Esq."—a formula which our tailors, bootmakers, and all "high-class" traders, superior clerks, and, tax-collectors now claim, less as a privilege than a right, sanctioned by usage.

By virtue of the "clean cut" H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught's son will ultimately become Duke of Connaught, minus "H.R.H."

The *ci-devant* Prince Louis of Battenberg was the first of the new peers who have renounced their German titles and dignities to take his seat in the House of Lords (July 25, 1917). His sponsors were the Marquis of Crewe and the Marquis of Lansdowne. In his "patent" (of nobility) he is noted (1) as Sir Louis Alexander Mountbatten, (2) previously known as His Serene Highness Prince Louis Alexander of the Principality of Battenberg and the Grand

---

* "The House and Family of Windsor," July 18, 1917.

Duchy of Cassel, (3) Viscount Alderney, (4) Earl of Medina, and (5) Marquis of Milford Haven.

THE ROYAL HOUSE AND FAMILY OF WINDSOR

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *July* 17, 1917.

The King held a Council at 10.30 o'clock. The following were summoned to be present: Field-Marshal the Duke of Connaught, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Finlay (Lord Chancellor), the Right Hon. D. Lloyd George, M.P. (Prime Minister and First Lord of the Treasury), the Earl Curzon of Kedleston (Lord President), the Earl of Rosebery, the Right Hon. A. J. Balfour, M.P. (Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs), the Right Hon. H. H. Asquith, M.P., the Right Hon. Andrew Fisher (High Commissioner of the Commonwealth of Australia), the Right Hon. G. N. Barnes, M.P. (Minister of Pensions), the Right Hon. W. P. Schreiner (High Commissioner of the Union of South Africa), and Lieut.-General the Right Hon. J. C. Smuts (Minister without Portfolio). [Mr. Balfour and Mr. Asquith were unable to attend the Council.]

His Majesty was pleased to declare in Council his determination respecting the name of his House and Family, and the discontinuance of all German Titles.

Sir Almeric FitzRoy was in attendance as Clerk of the Council.

His Majesty's decision was immediately announced by the following Royal Proclamation:

BY THE KING

A PROCLAMATION

Declaring that the Name of Windsor is to be borne by His Royal House and Family and Relinquishing the Use of All German Titles and Dignities.

GEORGE R.I.

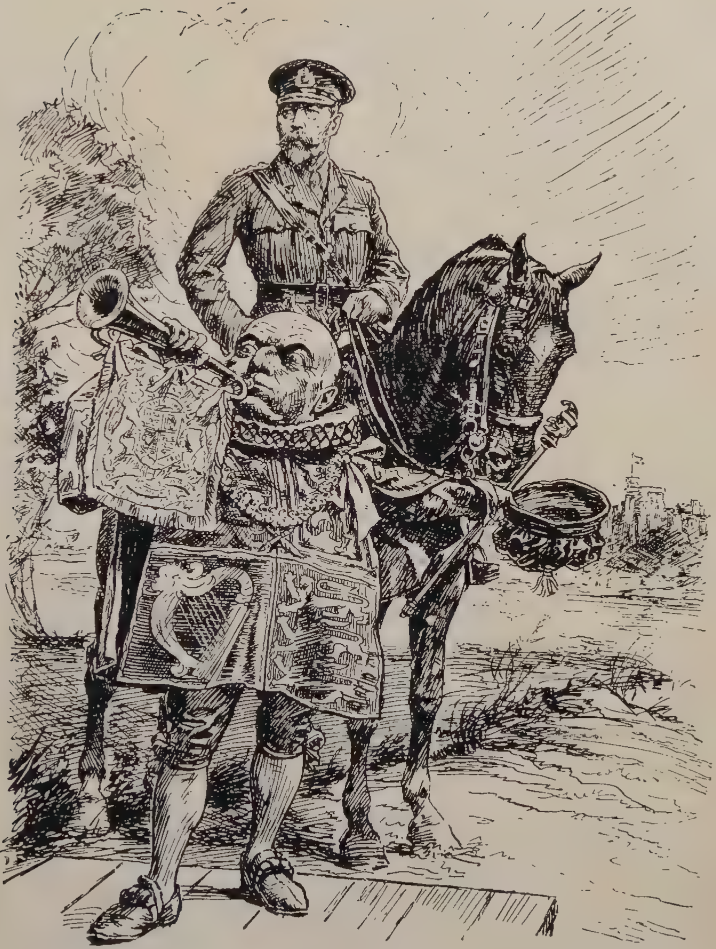
WHEREAS We, having taken into consideration the Name and Title of Our Royal House and Family, have determined that henceforth Our House and Family shall be styled and known as the House and Family of Windsor :

And whereas We have further determined for Ourselves and for and on behalf of Our descendants and all other the descendants of Our Grandmother Queen Victoria of blessed and glorious memory to relinquish and discontinue the use of all German Titles and Dignities :

And whereas We have declared these Our determinations in Our Privy Council :

Now, therefore, We, out of Our Royal Will and Authority, do hereby declare and announce that as from the date of this Our Royal Proclamation Our House and Family shall be styled and known as the House and Family of Windsor, and that all the descendants in the male line of Our said Grandmother Queen Victoria who are subjects of these Realms, other than female descendants who may marry or may have married, shall bear the said Name of Windsor :

And do hereby further declare and announce that We for Ourselves and for and on behalf of



Long Live the House of Windsor!
(July 25, 1917)
Reproduced by permission of the Proprietors of "Punch"

Our descendants and all other the descendants of Our said Grandmother Queen Victoria who are subjects of these Realms relinquish and enjoin the discontinuance of the use of the Degrees, Styles, Dignities, Titles, and Honours of Dukes and Duchesses of Saxony and Princes and Princesses of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, and all other German Degrees, Styles, Dignities, Titles, Honours and Appellations to Us or to them heretofore belonging or appertaining.

Given at Our Court at *Buckingham Palace* this Seventeenth day of *July*, in the year of our Lord One thousand nine hundred and seventeen, and in the Eighth Year of Our Reign.

GOD SAVE THE KING.

PRINCESS MARY (AND FOUR OF HER BROTHERS) "OF WINDSOR"

The titles of the sons and daughter of King George and Queen Mary are now (dating from July 17, 1917):

H.R.H. THE PRINCE OF WALES.
H.R.H. PRINCE ALBERT OF WINDSOR.
H.R.R. PRINCESS MARY OF WINDSOR.
H.R.H. PRINCE HENRY OF WINDSOR.
H.R.H. PRINCE GEORGE OF WINDSOR.
H.R.H. PRINCE JOHN OF WINDSOR.

The Duke of Connaught (the King's only surviving uncle) and his son, Prince Arthur of Connaught (the King's cousin), retain their titles as heretofore.

When the King's sons (the Prince of Wales excepted) marry, and have children, these latter will be Princes and Princesses of Windsor. Children of these latter Princes and Princesses will *not*, however, be Princes or Princesses; they will take the Family new name of WINDSOR—the sons being styled Lord and the daughters Lady, the Christian name of each preceding the surname, as in the case of ordinary persons.

Some of the newly titled personages made their first appearance at a public ceremony on July 19, 1917. The scene was the Chapel Royal, St. James's Palace—the occasion the marriage of Lady Irene Frances Adza Denison, only daughter of the Earl and Countess of Londesborough, and the King's cousin, Captain the Marquis of Carisbrooke (Grenadier Guards), eldest son of Princess Beatrice and the late Prince Henry of Battenberg. The wedding guests whose names had undergone a transformation by the King's decree were Princess Beatrice (His Majesty's aunt), the Marquis and Marchioness of Milford Haven, and the Earl and Countess of Medina. Lord Leopold Mountbatten, the bridegroom's brother, was unable to be present, or he would have acted as best man.

The King's Coat of Arms has no German "blazonry," so no change has been necessary. The case of His Majesty's uncle, the Duke of Connaught, is different, and consequently the "escutcheon of the august House of Saxony," "charged" (the heraldic term) in the centre of the Royal Arms borne by this Royal Duke, had to be taken out.

Until June, 1917, all Queen Victoria's descendants were styled Dukes or Duchesses of Saxony. As a consequence of the "relinquishment" of those titles the shields which bore their heraldry have been altered.

Enemy Monarchs and Knights of the Garter degraded

In May, 1915, the banners and brazen tablets of the eight enemy Knights of the Garter which used to hang in St. George's Chapel, Windsor, were taken down by order of the King, and the names were struck off the Garter roll.

The eight enemy knights thus deprived were: The late Emperor of Austria, the Kaiser, the King of Würtemberg, the German Crown Prince, the Grand Duke of Hesse and the Rhine, Prince Henry of Prussia, the Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, and the Duke of Cumberland.

When, on June 19, 1917, the Bill to deprive the enemy Princes of their British titles was discussed in the House of Lords, Lord Courtney asked his fellow-peers to consider again whether it was worth while going on with this Bill—a measure of the minutest character. "It is directed against two, or, at most, three individuals, who are not at all important," he said. "I think that the House will best preserve its dignity by taking no further action." Lord Buckmaster said he was informed on good authority that one of the persons who might be affected by the Bill had not only not taken up arms against this country, but had been of the greatest possible help to our Red Cross Society in Germany. "It would be very hard," he said, "that the provision in the Bill regarding voluntary residence in an enemy country, which in this case has been used for no purpose except the good of this country, should be considered sufficient reason for taking away the title enjoyed by this person."

These arguments fell on deaf ears, and later the Bill became an Act of Parliament.

On June 20, 1917, Mr. Bonar Law announced in the House of Commons that all enemy aliens are to be stripped of their British orders of chivalry. The statement was made in reply to a question by Mr. Swift MacNeill, who asked if, following the act of the King with regard to German titles in the Royal Family, the Government would advise His Majesty to remove immediately from the Knighthood of the Bath all enemy Princes, including the King of Bulgaria, the Emperor of Germany, and Prince Albert of Schleswig-Holstein, and also to remove ten enemy princes from the Victorian Order. Mr. Bonar Law said, amidst loud cheers, "Orders have been given that *all* alien enemies shall cease to be members of any British order of chivalry to which they were appointed previous to the war."

The Enemy Princes Bill (now, as stated above, an Act of Parliament) deprived three British-born Princes, who have become enemies, of their titles, rank, and precedence in this country. The three are:

The Duke of Cumberland and Teviotdale, also Earl of Armagh;

The Duke of Albany (Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha), G.C.V.O., also Earl of Clarence and Baron Arklow; and

Prince Albert of Schleswig-Holstein, son of Prince and Princess Christian. He is still fighting for the Germans. His brother, Prince Christian Victor, fought and died on the British side in the South African War.

In the House of Commons, on July 17, 1917, on an order for the second reading of the Titles Deprivation Bill, Mr. Swift MacNeill said nothing like it had been introduced in the whole history of Parliament, and it showed how very difficult it was to impress the Government with a sense of its duty.

In November, 1914, he raised the question whether the two persons aimed at in the Bill—the Duke of Cumberland and the Duke of Albany—were to be allowed to retain their titles and privileges. He then asked the Government to be allowed to introduce a Bill to deprive them of their titles, but was not allowed to do so. Since then he had repeatedly pursued the subject, and it was only after a lapse of nearly three years that the House was asked to pass the second reading of a measure which every one agreed was an act of justice to the men who were fighting and had died for their country.

Sir G. Cave said he did not rise earlier to explain the Bill because he felt sure that every one in the House was thoroughly cognisant of its proposals, and also because the hon. member (Mr. MacNeill) had given his promise that if it were introduced it should pass through the House in not more than three minutes. (Laughter.)

Mr. MacNeill : If I said that I said it in a Pickwickian sense. (Renewed laughter.) I also referred to a Bill of my own.

Sir G. Cave (continuing) said the introduction of the Bill was no doubt due to the laudable pertinacity of the hon. gentleman, to whom the House owed a good deal of thanks. The Government did not take the view that the persons dealt with under the Bill ought in any legal sense to be called traitors. They were subjects of a foreign country, and could not be accused of that serious crime. The Bill was necessary to prevent them from sitting in the House of Lords, and, further, it was thought a very great anomaly that persons who were fighting against us should hold British titles during and after the war.

Mr. King approved of the Bill, because it represented a great new democratic principle, in that at last the rights and wishes of the people were recognised in connection with matters which undoubtedly were the Royal prerogative. The Bill, however, was unsatisfactory because it was a purely permissive measure, and it did not follow that these Princes were to lose their titles.

[Mr. King was, perhaps, misreported.]

The Guelph Family and "Welf," its Founder: The Guelph Military Order: the Two Surviving Members—the Duke of Cumberland and Baron von Pawel-Rammingham (or Rammingen)

"Welf" was the name of the founder, and of several successive chiefs, of the princely family commonly known as the "Guelphs," which is represented in modern times by the Ducal House of Brunswick, and was also represented until July, 1917, by the present dynasty of Great Britain and Ireland.

"Guelph" is the Italian form of "Welfe." At the Battle of Weinsburg, in Swabia (1140), Henry the Lion, Duke of Saxony, used as a battle-cry, "Hie Welfe" (the family name). The Ghibellines supported in Italy the side of the German Emperors and the Guelphs supported the cause of the Pope, although later they became rabid Protestants. Stubbs, in his Lectures on early English history, spells the name "Guelf."

The Royal Hanoverian Guelphic (Military) Order was instituted in 1815 by the then Prince Regent (afterwards George IV) to commemorate the establishment of Hanover as a kingdom, and was formerly far more British than Hanoverian. This order, which ceased to be conferred in this country upon the death of William IV, had its complete array of decorations, with the motto, "Nec aspera terrent" ("Nor do difficulties dismay us"). The following are its designations "with its only surviving British representatives":*

---

* Whitaker's Peerage, 1916.—The Duke of Cumberland was in 1917 deprived of all his *British* titles; but the Hanoverian Baron retains his.

G.C.H. (Knight Grand Cross of Hanover—H.R.H. the Duke of Cumberland.

K.H. (Knight of Hanover, corresponding to Companions, and not entitled " Sir ")—Baron von Pawel-Rammingham is the last of the K.H.'s in this country.

A K.H. also, it will be seen, is H.R.H. Princess Frederica, Baroness von Pawel-Rammingham, eldest daughter of the late King of Hanover and sister of the present Duke of Cumberland, consort of Queen Alexandra's sister Thyra. The Baroness is a Princess, etc., of Hanover, a Princess of the United Kingdom, Duchess of Brunswick-Lüneburg, C.I. and R.R.C., and was born at Hanover in 1848. She was married in 1880, in the private chapel at Windsor Castle, in the presence of Queen Victoria and some members of the Royal Family, to Baron von Pawel-Rammingham, K.C.B., K.C.V.O., K.H., V.D., Honorary Colonel 6th (Terr.) Battalion Essex Regiment. The Baron, who was naturalised in 1880, was formerly equerry to his wife's father. The Baron and Baroness reside at Mouriscot, Bois de Boulogne, Biarritz.

Queen Victoria uncertain about her Name

Some years before Queen Victoria's death there was a Guelph exhibition in Bond Street, and in a letter to the late Sir Coutts Lindsay Her Majesty said she had always thought her name was, not Guelph, but D'Este. The Queen herself wrote a memorandum to this effect, but shortly afterwards requested the document to be returned to her! That there was reason for the Queen's belief is proved by the genealogical history of the Guelphs. As her Consort's name was Wettin, the idea was prevalent that the same nomenclature passed to the Queen on her marriage. But that would have been so only had her husband been King. As his status was inferior to hers, she retained the name borne by her (whatever it was—D'Este or Guelph) before her marriage. Many writers went wrong on this point in July, 1917, when discussing the Royal Family's new name, Windsor.

The oldest known member of the Guelph family was Hugo, Marquis of *Este* (A.D. 1000), a name derived from a district in the Italian province of Padua. Half a century later Albert Azon II, Marquis of Este, acquired by his marriage with Kunigunde, daughter of Guelph II, Count of Altdorf (Würtemberg), the domains of that house, and became a recognised Prince of the Holy Roman Empire. This seat of the Guelphs in Germany is better known as Weingarten, and has a celebrated abbey, founded by the Guelphs. The Guelphs of Este-Altdorf reigned as Dukes in Bavaria from 1070 until 1138, and from 1156 until 1180. In the fourth decade of the twelfth century the Guelphs inherited the fief of Nordheim-Supplingenburg, in the Duchy of Brunswick.*

The Guelphs reigned as Dukes in Saxony in 1137–1138 and in 1142–1180. One of them was Duke of Brunswick (1235), others adopted the title of Duke of Celle (1520), and in 1569 they assumed the government of Lüneburg.

---

* The present Duke of Brunswick is the eldest surviving son of the Duke of Cumberland (Queen Alexandra's brother-in-law), and married a daughter of the German Emperor.

In 1692 the head of the House of Guelph assumed the title of Prince-Elector of Hanover. In 1714, on the death of Queen Anne, George Louis of Hanover succeeded to the English Throne by virtue of the Act of Settlement, and took the title of George I. In 1694 he had divorced his wife, Sophia Dorothea, who, when hereditary Princess of Hanover, became the mother of a Prince who was afterwards (1727–1760) our King George II. In 1760 the grandson of George II ascended the Throne as George III. His father had been Prince Frederick Louis of Wales (married to Augusta of Saxe-Coburg). George III was the first Guelph King born in England, and he is remembered unfavourably as the deviser of the Royal Marriage Act (12 Geo. III, cap. 2). His eldest son, who had been Regent for nine years, succeeded to the Crown as George IV in 1820. His brother (born at Windsor) ascended the Throne as William IV in 1830, died without issue in 1837, and was succeeded by Victoria I.

THE "GOTHA" WILL HAVE TO BE ALTERED

The *Almanach de Gotha* describes Great Britain and Ireland as "a Constitutional Monarchy hereditary in the *English House of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha*"; and on other pages of this Hunnish authority may be read what follows:

GRANDE-BRETAGNE ET IRLANDE

(MAISON DE SAXE-COBOURG ET GOTHA)

Les cadets descendant de la Reine Victoria portent le titre de Princes et Princesses Royale de Grande-Bretagne et Irlande et de Princes et Princesses de Saxe-Cobourg et Gotha, Ducs et Duchesses de Saxe, avec la qualification d'Altesse Royale.

MAISON DE BRUNSWICK-LÜNEBOURG
(MAISON DES GUELFES)

Les enfants du chef actuel de la maison portent le titre de Prince ou Princesse Royale de Grande Bretagne et d'Irlande, Duc ou Duchesse de Brunswick et de Lünebourg, avec la qualification d'Altesse Royale.

HANOVERIAN KINGS OF ENGLAND

From 1714 until the death of King William IV in 1837, Lüneburg, or Hanover, and Great Britain were ruled by the same Sovereign. In 1708 George Louis, son of the Elector Ernest Augustus, succeeded to the Electorship. Ernest Augustus took an important step in the history of Hanover when he married Sophia, daughter of the Elector Palatine, Frederick V, and granddaughter of James I of England, for through his mother the Elector George Louis became, by the terms of the Act of Settlement of 1701, King of Great Britain and Ireland in 1714. Kings George I and II preferred Hanover to England as residences, and it was a cause of complaint that the interests of Great Britain were sacrificed to those of the smaller country. King George III was more British than his grandfather or his great-grandfather. When the Elector George Louis became King of Great Britain he appointed a representative (Statthalter) to govern the Electorate, and thus the union of the two countries was attended with considerable changes in Hanover as well as in

Great Britain. Matters came to a climax on the death of King William IV in 1837. By the law of Hanover women could not ascend the throne, and accordingly Ernest Augustus, Duke of Cumberland, fifth son of George III, and not Victoria, succeeded William as Sovereign (of Hanover) in 1837, thus separating the crowns of Great Britain and Hanover after a union of 123 years.

George V, the new King of Hanover, who was blind, shared his father's political views.

As a result of the war between Prussia and Hanover in 1866, the latter country, by a decree of September 20 in that year, was formally annexed to Prussia, and became a province of that kingdom. King George V appealed in vain to the Powers. Many Hanoverians remained loyal to George, and some of them served in the Guelph legion, which was maintained largely in Paris at the ex-King's expense. All efforts failed to bring about the return of the King to Hanover, although the Guelph party continued to agitate and hope, even after the war of 1870 had immensely increased the power and the prestige of Prussia. King George V died in Paris in 1878.

> The tragic mistake of the House of Hanover [said the *Saturday Review*, June 30, 1917] has been that in two centuries its members have failed to make themselves thoroughly English. The cause of this failure has been the sad and stupid superstition that Royal families are a caste apart, of different flesh and blood from their fellows, of a clay superior, *meliore luto*, to that of which are fashioned the best men and women in the countries over which they reign. Owing to this superstition our Hanoverian Kings have for six generations married themselves, their sons, and their daughters to German Princesses and Princes, because there were no other Protestants of Royal blood to be found. Caroline of Anspach (wife of George II), Augusta

of Saxe-Coburg (mother of George III), Charlotte of Mecklenburg-Strelitz (wife of George III), Caroline of Brunswick (wife of George IV), Adelaide of Saxe-Meiningen (wife of William IV), Victoria of Saxe-Coburg (mother of Queen Victoria), what a dreary line of prim, proud German women, harsh of feature and of mind, not one of whom has ever touched the heart of a generous and hospitable nation as wife, mother, or queen! The blackguardism of her husband did indeed excite some sympathy with Caroline of Brunswick, but it evaporated the day after her death. The Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, who married his cousin, Queen Victoria, was that very rare bird, a really clever Prince. His abilities were of a first-rate calibre; his education was better than that of most of the English noblemen and statesmen with whom he had to deal. He was broad-minded and refined; he had no vices and many conspicuous virtues; he was a perfect husband and father. But he was thoroughly German, and to his influence over his wife undoubtedly was due the blind pro-German policy of England during the latter half of the nineteenth century.

" We do not know whether it would be desirable or convenient for the cadet members of the Royal Family to have in the future a surname which should also be unmistakably British. . . . ' Plantagenet ' would perhaps be thought too theatrical. But surely ' Lancaster ' could excite no objections. . . . The need of such a surname may not arise, but we are sure that if it does a good British name will be chosen, with roots deep in the past."*

The *Spectator* was even more unfortunate in its enthusiasm for " Lancaster " as an alternative to " Plantagenet," for the first is a well-known family name among our commonalty!

King George is a descendant of the Tudors (Kings of England) and of the Stuarts (Kings of Scotland). At the time Mr. Woodward was librarian Queen Victoria visited the Royal Library at Windsor to inquire how that official was progressing with the arrangement of a portion of the huge collection of original letters of the Stuarts. "You must know, Mr. Woodward," said Her Majesty, "that I take a great interest in the Stuarts; in fact, I am a devoted and enthusiastic admirer of that House." "And I, ma'am," replied the librarian, "may hope to be pardoned for saying that I am a devoted admirer of the House of Hanover."

---

* *Spectator*, June 23, 1917.

By the Duchess of Kent's first marriage, Queen Victoria was also connected with the Mediatised German Princes—those who during the revolution had lost their sovereign power. The more ambitious did not disdain to take service with Austria or Prussia and even the smaller States. "It was possible, therefore, for the Queen's mother, a Princess of Saxe-Coburg, to marry the Prince of Leiningen without losing caste. Her daughter, the Princess Feodore, the Queen's half-sister, married Ernest, Prince of Hohenlohe-Langenburg. . . . That family held, besides their extensive possessions in Würtemberg and Bavaria, the County of Gleichen in Saxe-Coburg. . . . The Queen's connection with Germany always remained a personal and family matter, and not a political one. . . . Queen Victoria was closely allied with the Royal Families of France, Portugal, Belgium, Saxe-Coburg, and Würtemberg. . . . The Duke of York, for many years Commander-in-Chief of the Army, married a Prussian Princess, but left no issue, and his death, in 1827, left the succession open to his younger brother, the Duke of Clarence, afterwards King William IV, and after him to the Princess Victoria. . . . The ablest of the brothers of William

IV, though also the most unpopular, was the Duke of Cumberland, of whom King William said: 'Ernest is not a bad fellow, but if any one has a corn he will be sure to tread on it.'" *

Could Queen Victoria's predecessor on the throne—her uncle, King William IV—have had his way there would have been no German, but a Dutch Prince Consort. William IV favoured an alliance of his niece with a son (Prince Alexander) of the Prince of Orange. On this subject there will be found in Mr. Benson's and Lord Esher's work (vol. i, chap. v) a letter which our papers might have quoted with advantage to their readers when King George's memorable achievements in June and July were engrossing the attention of the supremely delighted nation. This letter is from Leopold I, King of the Belgians, to his idolised niece, Princess Victoria, and is dated May 13, 1836, nearly four years before her marriage. King Leopold wrote:

> My dearest Child,—I got this time a very small letter from your good little Ladyship. . . . I am really *astonished* at the conduct of your old Uncle the King; this invitation of the Prince of Orange and his sons, this forcing him upon others, is very extraordinary. . . . Not later than yesterday I got a half-official communication from England insinuating that it would be *highly* desirable that the visit of *your* relatives *should not take place this year*—qu'en dites-vous? The relations of the Queen and the King, therefore, to the God-knows-what-degree, are to come in shoals and rule the land, when *your relations* are to be

---

* "The Letters of Queen Victoria." Selection from Her Majesty's Correspondence between the years 1837 and 1861. Published by authority of His Majesty the King. Edited by Arthur Christopher Benson, M.A., and Viscount Esher, G.C.V.O., K.C.B. In three volumes. London: John Murray, Albemarle Street, W., 1908.

forbidden the country, and that when, as you know, the whole of your relations have ever been very dutiful and kind to the King. Really and truly I never heard or saw anything like it, and I hope it will *a little rouse your spirit.* Now that slavery is even abolished in the British Colonies I do not comprehend *why your lot alone should be to be kept, a white little slavey*, in England, for the pleasure of the Court, who never bought you, as I am not aware of their ever having gone to any expense on that head, or the King's even having *spent a sixpence for your existence.* I expect that my visits in England will also be prohibited by an Order in Council. Oh, consistency and political or *other honesty*, where must one look for you? I have not the least doubt that the King, in his passion for the Oranges, will be *excessively rude to your relations.* This, however, will not signify much; they are *your guests*, and not *his*, and will, therefore, *not* mind it.

The Editors of the "Letters" have this illuminating note on the above:

King Leopold had for some time cherished a hope of uniting the Princess Victoria in marriage with her cousin, Prince Albert of Coburg. He therefore arranged that the Prince, with his elder brother, Prince Ernest, should pay a visit to the Duchess of Kent at Kensington Palace. King William naturally opposed a scheme which he knew met with the approval of his sister-in-law.* He accordingly invited the Prince of Orange and his two sons at the same time, and favoured the candidature of the younger son, Prince Alexander. The King (it is believed) went so far as to say that no other marriage should ever take place, and that the Duke of Saxe-Coburg and his sons should never put foot in the country: they should not be allowed to land, and must go back whence they came.

The Prince of Orange had himself been a candidate for the hand of Princess Charlottte, and had no reason to be friendly to King Leopold, of whom it is recorded that he said: "Voilà un homme qui a pris ma femme et mon royaume."

On the Revival of Dukedoms

On July 25, 1917, the *Daily Mail* published the subjoined letter ("The Royal Family Name") from Mr. Charles Benham, Inner Temple:

---

* The Duchess of Kent, Victoria's mother.

> There appears to have arisen a certain amount of popular confusion with regard to the adoption of the name of Windsor by our Royal House, so that it seems worth pointing out that the correct style of the King's children is not "princes and princesses of the House of Windsor," but "princes and princesses of Great Britain and Ireland." Thus, Prince Albert is *not* Prince Albert of Windsor, but Prince Albert of Great Britain and Ireland.
>
> When the princes come of age it is possible that the King may revive in their favour certain dukedoms historically associated with the Royal Family, such as the dukedom of Kent, of Edinburgh, of Gloucester, etc. Accordingly, take the instance of one of the princes who might be made Duke of Gloucester marrying and having a family. His sons would be princes "of Gloucester"; the eldest in due course becoming Duke of Gloucester. When these grandsons of His present Majesty married and had families the grandson Duke of Gloucester's heir would ultimately succeed to the dukedom, but he would not be a royal highness or a prince. *His* younger brothers (great-grandsons of King George) would be Lord George Windsor, Lord John Windsor and the like. This is the point at which the family name emerges. And Lord George Windsor's son (the great-great-grandson of the present King) would be plain Mr. Windsor. I think this will be found to be the correct way of reading the official announcements.

My answer to this suggestion of the possibility of a revival of "the dukedoms of Kent, Edinburgh, Gloucester, etc.," is this: The Duke of Kent was, needless to say, Queen Victoria's father; otherwise, he was more or less of a nonentity. Let us have something more in consonance with the splendid up-to-dateness of the George the Fifth period—a period which will glitter in our history if only by reason of His Majesty's inspiriting and courageous Decrees of June and July, which have rekindled the flame of loyalty to the Throne and its resolute occupant throughout the Empire.

A revival by His Majesty, for the use of one of his sons, of the Edinburgh dukedom is wholly out of the question. The illustrious lady who is Dowager Duchess of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha (aunt of the ex-Tsar Nicholas II) is still best known, and frequently spoken of, as Duchess of Edinburgh, a title which she will probably reassume now that "Saxe-Coburg and Gotha" has come under the Royal ban. What will happen when, on the decease of the Duchess of Albany, the Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, her enemy son, claims, as remainderman in fee, the Claremont property settled upon his father (Prince Leopold) by that Prince's mother (Queen Victoria)? *

I come to the last of Mr. Benham's suggestions, which derive importance from the fact that they were read by the million, but not otherwise.

To revive "Gloucester" would reveal poverty of invention and imagination; it is quite unlikely to commend itself to the Sovereign. Perhaps everybody does not know (or, shall we say, remember?) that the last Royal bearer of this title was "Duke of Gloucester *and Edinburgh*," and married his cousin Mary, a daughter of King George III. That Duke died in 1834, leaving no children. His widow lived until 1857.

On the subject of the new title of the Royal House, Violet Lady Beaumont wrote to the same paper:

> In a leading article in the *Daily Mail* it is stated that the name of Plantagenet was not revived because it was a nickname. I hardly think that term can be applied to the splendid and

---

* *Vide* the chapter, vol. ii, on the Dowager Duchess of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha.

historic name borne by eight of our Kings in succession, each of whom had a distinctive name which might fitly be termed a nickname, viz.:

Henry II, nicknamed Fitz-Empresse.
Richard I, nicknamed Cœur de Lion.
John, nicknamed Lackland.
Henry III, nicknamed of Winchester.
Edward I, nicknamed Longshanks.
Edward II, nicknamed of Caernarvon.
Edward III, nicknamed of Windsor.
Richard II, nicknamed of Bordeaux.

Three Kings of the House of Lancaster, who were also Plantagenets, likewise bore distinctive names. They were:

Henry IV, nicknamed of Bolingbroke.
Henry V, nicknamed of Monmouth.
Henry VI, nicknamed of Windsor.

There is no historic precedent for continuing these purely personal names in successive generations. Windsor is not an uncommon name, and is to be met with in humble ranks of life; on the other hand I have failed to discover Plantagenet, except as a Christian name among families whose royal descent entitles them to use it.

Further letters followed, but lack of space precludes their quotation here.

The new title adopted by the King suggests to a student * a few details of the word not generally known. Windsor figures in "Domesday Book" and the "Anglo-Saxon Chronicle." But even so, the learned philologist would doubt if the King has escaped Teutonic associations. Windsor is, says Skeat, the shore of Wændel, which is the same as Vandal. "The name, so far as I remember, has not been besmirched by fiction. Mr. Windsor, in 'The Fortunes of Nigel,' was an elderly clergyman, 'a decent, venerable man,' who read evening prayers for George Heriot."

* *Saturday Review*, July 28, 1917.

The last King of Hanover, who bore the same name as our present Sovereign, viz. George V, died in Paris, in exile, in June 1878. In his diary, June 12, the Duke of Cambridge records the event: "On arrival at the Bristol Hotel, Paris, at seven, heard of the serious condition, and immediately afterwards of the death, of the poor King of Hanover. It was, at the last, very sudden, he having been out driving the day before. Saw the Prince of Wales, and drove with him to the King's house, and saw Ernest, the Queen, and Frederica, all in a dreadful state at the sad and most overwhelming loss they had just sustained. Mary I saw later in the day. . . . Later again to the Hanoverians. . . . Home to write letters, and then again to the Hanoverians, where we had a long conference on several very important matters. They were all wonderfully calm and collected, poor dear people! and I felt most deeply for them." "June 18. The funeral of the poor King of Hanover is to be at St. George's Chapel, Windsor, on Monday next. I cannot, alas! be back in time."

The funeral was attended by the then Prince and Princess of Wales. Two years previously the King and Queen of Hanover were in London. Of this visit the Duke of Cambridge writes (May 16, 1876): "Went at 6.30 to Victoria Station to receive the King and Queen of Hanover, with their son Ernest, and Frederica and Mary. The Wales's and the whole family were present. They went at once to see my dear mother, and then to Claridge's, where they are staying. They seemed delighted with the welcome they received. 17th. Went to Claridge's, and had a very lengthened interview with the King of Hanover and the whole family. He seemed delighted to be here, poor man! 21st. After dinner the Crown Prince [Hanover] came to see me and to talk quietly over various matters with me. He seems an extremely nice, prudent young fellow, and I like him much. He is not at all good-looking, but has a nice figure."

Princess Alice [King Edward's sister] died on December 14, 1878. On the 16th the Duke of Cambridge noted: "Wanted to go to Darmstadt for the funeral, but was not able to travel because of my gout. . . . Mildmay started to-day, with Colville and Teesdale, for Copenhagen, to represent me at Ernest's [Duke of Cumberland, son of the King and Queen of Hanover] marriage on the 21st with Thyra [sister of Queen Alexandra]. I wish the marriage had been put off, but it has not been."

Eight-and-twenty years after the death of her consort, King George V, the Queen of Hanover passed away in January, 1907, after an existence of close upon ninety years. Marie, daughter of Joseph, Duke of Saxe-Altenburg, a tiny Saxon Duchy, was wedded to the then Crown Prince of Hanover, a grandson of our George III, as far back as 1843. The King and Queen of Hanover were called to the throne in November, 1851, the memorable year which brought all the world to London for our Great Exhibition, which was to inaugurate universal peace, but which preluded the war in the Crimea, to be succeeded by the Indian Mutiny, and how many more sanguinary conflicts between the nations! —all insignificant by comparison with that Armageddon which began in 1914 and was perhaps at its height on our Western Front only in July–August,

1917. The year 1866 saw Prussia and Austria at grips, and the exile of "the Hanovers," the result of their loyal adherence to beaten Austria. Hanover came under the iron heel of Bismarck, and was crushed out of existence, Europe looking on without extending the sorely needed helping hand. So there was an end of little Hanover.

King George V suffered the humiliation of the sequestration of his private estate as well as the loss of his crown; the sequestration was, however, removed in 1892, the Duke of Cumberland (the King's son) declaring that "he had no intention of engaging in any undertaking which would threaten the peace of the German Empire." The exiled family lived a retired, tranquil existence in the Salzkammergut, in the territory of that Austria whose cause they had so gallantly espoused in "six-and-sixty," only four years before the destruction of the French Empire by Bismarck and Moltke. The son of Hanover's deposed sovereign is best known as Duke of Cumberland and Teviotdale (his British title) and Earl of Armagh (in the peerage of Ireland), and as the brother-in-law of Queen Alexandra. Of his British titles and honours he has been deprived by our own Sovereign, as noted in these pages. Castle Cumberland, where Queen Marie died, stands on the edge of the Traunsee lake, and has been often visited by the members of the Danish and English Royal Families. The Queen of Hanover's second daughter, Princess Mary, died two years and a half before her mother. The elder, Princess Frederica, is, as stated, the wife of Baron von Pawel-Rammingham.

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHAPTER XIII

"LE ROY LE VEULT"

The gradual merging of the members of the Royal Family in the nobility of this country, which is clearly part of the King's design, in the creation of Peerages of the United Kingdom for his kinsmen in lieu of their German names and titles, is a return to the old ways, and a most welcome indication that the wish expressed by General Smuts in his great speech in the Royal Gallery of Westminster Palace on May 18, 1917, that henceforth the members of the Royal Family shall form matrimonial relations with subjects of the British Empire instead of with "princelings" taken from Central Europe, has, like General Smuts's entrance into the War Cabinet, been approved in the highest quarter. A suggestion of this character is inspired by the democratic principle at its best and its highest. It goes far to explain General Smuts's description of the British Constitution as a hereditary Republic, the King, of course, being at once the father and the offspring of his people, the outward and visible representative, and the express image of the Empire of which he is the head.—Mr. J. G. Swift MacNeill, M.P., in the *Weekly Dispatch*, June 24, 1917.

The Cologne *People's Gazette* (*Volkszeitung*) published an angry leading article on the King's adoption of an English family name. It threatened that in future German princes will refuse to marry foreign princesses.

"*I mean to do it. I will do it.*"

In an eloquent appreciation of our late Sovereign, Comte d'Haussonville, a distinguished member of the Académie Française, with whose friendship and occasional collaboration I am honoured, wrote: "In the Prince of Wales few recognised the future King Edward." *Mutato nomine*, and the same may be said of King George V, who courageously marked the end of his Septennate by an act which has been acclaimed throughout the Empire. I call that step courageous because it affects his own and his Consort's relatives, and was prompted by the sole desire of the King to gratify his millions of subjects. The Princes and Princesses of Teck and Battenberg have been from the outset of their connection with this country loyal and dutiful subjects of three Sovereigns in succession, and have commended themselves to all classes of the public. Needless to enumerate the services they have wholeheartedly rendered to us during the last three years. The action taken by the King was essentially a friendly one, and was presumably regarded as such by each and all of those whom it directly concerned. The public, however, aided by the Press, read between the lines of one of the most notable State papers ever issued, and so realized its true origin and intention. The King overcame all (if any) opposition.

It was seen by the relatives and friends of the four Princes of the Houses of Teck and Battenberg that those personages had received from the King a handsome solatium for their deprivation of the titles hitherto borne by them. A Duke and three Princes now enjoy the distinction of British Peers, and are thus entitled to seats in the House of Lords and so take part in shaping the destinies of the

Empire—a privilege which they cannot fail to value.

The Sovereign's great act of de-Germanisation of June, 1917, was not accomplished in a moment, not unattended by difficulties, not perhaps unaccompanied by obstacles. To realise the embarrassments of the situation as it presented itself to all concerned from the moment we declared war with Germany, we must put ourselves in the place of those affected by the alteration not in status but in nomenclature. It may well be surmised that there was some show of opposition to the change. For the personages chiefly concerned were among those nearest and dearest to the Monarch—Queen Mary at their head; Her Majesty's brothers; and the King's aunts Helena and Beatrice. Princess Helena and her husband, Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein, are not individually interfered with, but their daughters have been deprived of the use of the distinguishing family name, and their son Albert, that Kaiser-man to the core, has been at length, after an unaccountable delay, deprived of his English honours. Another grandson of Queen Victoria, the reigning Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, has been similarly stripped of his English titles and adornments. The cases of Prince Albert of Schleswig-Holstein and that Duke of Albany who succeeded his uncle the Duke of Edinburgh at Coburg had been frequently discussed in Parliament since the autumn of 1914, yet, as narrated in the preceding chapter, it was only on the 20th of June, 1917, that Mr. Bonar Law announced that "all enemy aliens are to be stripped of their British orders of chivalry."

In May, 1917, the friends of Queen Victoria's youngest daughter learnt that the title "Princess Henry of Battenberg" she had borne since her marriage in 1885 was about to be dispensed with, and that she intended to revert to her maiden name, "Princess Beatrice." Any doubts which may have been felt about the accuracy of this rumoured alteration of nomenclature were dispelled in the middle of May by the publication in the Court Circular of her name in its old form. This fact led to the accurate assumption that other titular changes might be imminent, and consequently there was less surprise in certain circles than there would otherwise have been when, on June 20, the King's Edict was made known to the Empire through the Press.

"After the three years through which we have passed," said the *Morning Post* (June 20), "*the disappearance of German names from the circle of Royalty cannot be too complete.*" These words are worthy of being emphasised if only because they come from the great paper which has been more constant to the Royal House than some of its contemporaries, and because Lord Glenesk enjoyed the confidence of Queen Victoria and her eldest son. The sentiment expressed in the passage cited is admirable in its independence and probably reflected the view of all who are competent to form an opinion on the point. The Germanisation of the English Court by Queen Victoria was the root-cause of much of that great Ruler's unpopularity. With what wonderment the British public must have read that at the christening of her eldest son, the father of our present Sovereign, the sponsors were the King of Prussia, Prince Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg, Princess Sophia, the Duchess of Saxe-Coburg, and the Duchess of Saxe-Gotha—*all Germans!* And after three years' unparalleled carnage and the perpetuation of countless indescribable infamies and tortures, it is melancholy to reflect that to her last hour the Queen-Empress of the British Empire was an implicit believer in the Christian goodness of that German grandson who has approved himself the most infamous character in both ancient and modern history, and countenanced and encouraged the commission by his savages of crimes

> Crueller than was ever told in tale,
> Or sung in song.

"There will be general approval of the King's decision to abolish the German titles held by members of his family," remarked the *Times*, in an article headed somewhat pedantically, "Restraint of Princes." ". . . There is assuredly no room in the record of these men [the Duke of Teck, Prince Alexander of Teck, Prince Louis of Battenberg, and Prince Alexander of Battenberg] for any suspicion that their German titles shelter anti-British proclivities. All the more reason, therefore, why they should welcome this opportunity to divest themselves of a meaningless association, and to merge themselves finally and conspicuously in their adopted people. . . . The renunciation of birthright demands some equivalent, and in one case at all events—that of Prince Louis of Battenberg—a seat in the House of Lords would be the natural sequel, irrespective of any question of birth, to a thoroughly distinguished career."

Nevertheless it would be idle to suppose that the "clean cut" of Teutonic titles was preceded or followed by anything approaching enthusiasm among those whom it affected. Yet they could not have complained for a moment that they would suffer even the slightest diminution of their prestige. The gentlest conceivable treatment has been meted out to the family of Prince and Princess Christian of Schleswig-Holstein. The latter loses her title of Duchess of Saxony—not a very great deprivation in the eyes of most people; and her daughters are still "their Highnesses Princess Helena Victoria and Princess Marie Louise," minus the affix "of Schleswig-Holstein." Prince Christian was born in Denmark, of Danish parents, and he remained a Dane until Prussia, in 1863, stole Schleswig-Holstein from Denmark, Queen Victoria looking on approvingly. What has incurred the wrath of all our people is the treacherous conduct of Prince Albert Christian, who, lost to all sense of patriotism and honour, has been, in colloquial phraseology, "fighting against us" throughout the war. An apologist for his conduct has assured us that the Prince will inherit considerable property in Germany! His father is the German Empress's uncle. At the trooping of the colour on the Horse Guards Parade, in 1914, two months before the war, Albert Christian, in his Prussian hussar uniform, rode alongside the King.

The Teck and Battenberg families were brought into unnecessary, undesirable, and unpleasant prominence by this same Prince Albert Christian's flagrant act of base ingratitude to the country of his birth, which has provided handsomely for his parents since their marriage more than half a century ago. And that act of Queen Victoria's grandson was of itself sufficient to arouse hostility towards all Germanic members of our Royal Family, completely Anglicised as they had become after their many years' residence among us.

As the war progressed the subject of the retention by enemy Sovereigns and Princes of the British honours which had been conferred upon them, chiefly by Queen Victoria, was raised in Parliament, and ultimately those enemies were deprived of the titles and dignities so bestowed. But much dissatisfaction was expressed at the slackness of the Asquithian Government in this direction. The Empire owes much to Mr. J. G. Swift MacNeill for his repeated "heckling" of the Ministry. But for his persistence the Kaiser and the others might have remained in possession of their British decorations until now. As that distinguished member of the Legislature has played so important a part in this matter, his considered observations on His Majesty's action in June are, I think, eminently worthy of a more permanent record than that of any newspaper. Mr. MacNeill wrote on the 24th of June:

> The decision of the King in the conditions brought about by the present war that those princes of his family who are his subjects and bear German names and titles should relinquish those titles and henceforth adopt British surnames is one of the many proofs that His Majesty not only gauges but reflects the sentiments of his subjects. Edmund Burke, who was so frequently in advance of his age, has well said that it is wise statesmanship to take into consideration not merely the sentiments but even the prejudices of the people, and the King, who has visited almost every part of his wide Dominions and is conversant with the feelings and sentiments of his subjects, of whom he aims and has succeeded—a high ambition—in being the outward

and visible symbol, has most deeply moved the hearts and affections of his people by his desire that the members of his family who are in education, trend of thought, and antecedents British should be British and not German in name. It is, I am sure, scarcely an exaggeration to say that the august personages who, Britons in heart and spirit, have gladly accepted British names and titles in lieu of German names and titles will also, like George III, who, despite many failings, always retained the affections of his people, " glory in the name of Briton."

This war, in which the very existence of this Empire and, what is more, of national liberty, justice between man and man, purity, truth, popular Government as contrasted with military despotism, are involved, compels us, in the great words of Bishop Berkeley, to see things as they are. I should be guilty of unworthy concealment if I did not say that the action of the King, and I believe that such action, although taken on the advice of his responsible Ministers, was in accordance with his own feelings, *and probably on his own initiative*, will tend in the very highest degree to make the Royal Family, so far from being a distinct caste, *part and parcel of the people*, " *bone of their bone and flesh of their flesh.*"

The determination that the Royal Family of this country shall be Britons of Britons cannot fail not only in this war but hereafter to have a most important bearing on the fortunes of the Empire in foreign affairs. The family relationships by which so many of the European monarchs are bound together, and the diplomatic usages of centuries, as well as the chronic inattention of the general public, as Professor Sheldon Amos a generation ago pointed out, in ordinary times to matters outside the country, are causes which in the aggregate have no doubt tended largely to expand the sphere of the Sovereign's action in foreign policy as contrasted with what is recognised and allowable in home and Colonial affairs. The resolve of the King to stamp indelibly the members of the Royal Family as Britons first and everything else afterwards shows that henceforth at least the close relationship of the Royal Family with other Royal European Houses which are now not likely to be perpetuated will never, as in the case of the cession by Great Britain in 1890 of Heligoland to the German Empire, and in numberless other instances, prevail in favour of individuals and family favouritism against the true interests of the people.*

---

* *Weekly Dispatch*, June 24, 1917.

When, in 1916–1917, we had the trouble with the Kaiser-ridden King Constantine, the Government was again taunted with its policy of shilly-shally and its "protection" of the German Emperor's brother-in-law. The malicious and unfounded rumour was even current that Constantine was also "protected" at the Court of St. James's. The arrival in London, one after the other, in 1917, of the then Greek King's brothers, and their reception by our Sovereign, provoked unpleasant comment. The father of the happily deposed Constantine (referred to in the House of Commons in July, 1917, by a Minister, as "Tino") was the brother of Queen Alexandra; naturally, therefore, Her Majesty was "on terms" with all the members of the Hellenic Royal Family, and in particular with the Dowager Queen Olga, who was a welcome guest at Marlborough House until a month or so before the war. The ugly rumour referred to was not merely on the lips of the so-called typical Briton, the "man in the street." One heard it at what are described in twentieth-century newspaper balderdash as "exclusive" clubs (as if every club is not more or less exclusive!). And was it not "five o'clock" and dinner-table "gup" in the sacrosanct "upper circles"?

In the King's Declarations of June and July, Saxony and Saxe-Coburg and Gotha are specifically mentioned; but what applies to them applies equally to "*all other German degrees*, styles, dignities, titles, honours, and appellations," etc., the use of all such being "relinquished and discontinued." It is important to take careful note of this wholesale banning in view of Queen Victoria's ancestry. Of that ancestry we may read in scores of volumes, more or less accurate. I have briefly referred to only one of them, which is undoubtedly correct—Queen Victoria's Letters.* In a note at the end of their preface the Editors say: "Our special thanks, in the preparation of these volumes, are due to Viscount Morley of Blackburn, who has read and criticised the book in its final form." The names of several other valuable helpers are recorded, including Miss Bertha Williams, who prepared the volumes for press; Mr. John Murray, Mr. Hugh Childers, and Lord Knollys.

In these incomparable volumes, issued at a price which brings them within the reach of all, Queen Victoria's ancestry is recorded in detail. The extract from the "Letters" given on p. 307 may be briefly supplemented here. On her father's side Queen Victoria belonged to the House of Brunswick, "which claimed to be the oldest of German princely families." At the date of her birth there were two branches—one ruling over the Duchy of Brunswick, the other over the Electorate (since 1815 the Kingdom) of Hanover. "One Princess of Brunswick had been the wife of George IV; another was the first wife of Frederick I, King of Würtemberg, who, after her death, married a daughter of George III. Frederick I was also first cousin, once removed, of Victoria. . . . The House of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, to which the Queen belonged on her mother's side, and with which she was to be even more intimately connected by her marriage, was one of the numerous branches into which the ancient and celebrated House of Wettin had broken up. . . . It is notable that the line has produced many of the most enlightened of the German princes. . . . The House of Coburg had gained an influential position owing partly to the marriage connections entered into by members of the Coburg House with the leading Royal Families of Europe. Within ten years Princes of Coburg were established: one upon the throne of Belgium, and two others next to the throne in Portugal and England, as consorts of their respective Queens."

---

* "The Letters of Queen Victoria." A selection from Her Majesty's Correspondence between the years 1837 and 1861. Published by authority of His Majesty the King [Edward VII]. Edited by Arthur Christopher Benson, M.A., and Viscount Esher, G.C.V.O., K.C.B. London: John Murray, Albemarle Street, W. 1908.

CHAPTER XIV

KING GEORGE, THE KAISER, HENRY THE SPY, AND MR. GERARD: THE KING'S TELEGRAMS, AND OTHERS

> With reference to a telegram * sent by the German Emperor to President Wilson on August 10, 1914, we have the highest authority to declare that the statements alleged by the Emperor to have been made to Prince Henry of Prussia by His Majesty the King are absolutely without any foundation.—*August* 6, 1917.

THIS announcement was described by the Press as an "official denial." "The highest authority" meant, of course, the King; and it was the King who thus promptly, and to the delight of all, gave his cousin of Potsdam the lie direct. King Edward, when Prince of Wales, knocked the ruffian down. King George calls him a Liar.

In August–September, 1917, the *Daily Telegraph* made what is termed in the United States a great "scoop" by publishing "My Four Years in Germany," by Mr. James W. Gerard, late U.S. Ambassador in Berlin. Nothing could have been more *à propos*. There is an irresistible fascination in all that this highly talented diplomatist has written of the enemy Emperor and the parasites who have aided him in his foul designs.

---

* Originally published by the *Daily Telegraph*, on the date quoted, in the first part of Mr. Gerard's "My Four Years in Germany," the most striking work issued since the outbreak of the war.

Mr. Gerard's first chapter appeared in the *Daily Telegraph* on August 6, and contained a feature of incontestable value, the full text of a telegram sent by the Kaiser to President Wilson on August 10, 1914, in which the Emperor stated that King George had received Prince Henry of Prussia (the Kaiser's brother) in London at the end of July, and empowered him to inform William II that England would remain neutral in the event of a war involving Germany and France, Austria and Russia. This was denied by King George, as shown above.

Mr. Gerard gives this vivid description of the episode: "The State Department cabled me a message from the President to the Emperor, which stated that the United States stood ready at any time to mediate between the warring Powers, and directed me to present this proposition direct to the Emperor. . . . I found the Emperor [at the Royal Palace, in a little garden fifty yards square] seated at a green iron table, under a large canvas garden umbrella. Telegraph forms were scattered on the table in front of him. I explained to the Emperor the object of my visit, and we had a general conversation about the war and the state of affairs. The Emperor took some of the large telegraph blanks and wrote out in pencil his reply to the President's offer. This reply, of course, I cabled immediately to the State Department."

WHAT THE KAISER WROTE TO PRESIDENT WILSON

For the President of the United States personally.

10.8.14.

1. H.R.H. Prince Henry was received by His Majesty King George V in London, who empowered him to transmit to me verbally that England would remain neutral if war broke out on the Continent involving Germany and France, Austria and Russia. This message was telegraphed to me by my brother from London after his conversation with H.M. the King, and was repeated verbally on July 29.

2. My Ambassador in London transmitted a message from Sir E. Grey to Berlin, saying that only in case France was likely to be crushed England would interfere.

3. On the 30th my Ambassador in London reported that Sir Edward Grey, in a " private " conversation, told him that if the conflict remained localised between Russia—not Serbia—and Austria, England would not move, but if we mixed in the fray she would take quick decisions and grave measures—that is, if I left my ally Austria in the lurch to fight alone, England would not touch me.

4. This communication being directly counter to the King's message to me, I telegraphed to H.M. on 29th or 30th, thanking him for his kind messages through my brother, and begging him to use all his power to keep France and Russia, his Allies, from making any warlike preparations calculated to disturb my work of mediation, stating that I was in constant communication with H.M. the Tsar. In the evening the King kindly answered that he had ordered his Government to use every possible influence with his Allies to refrain from taking any provocative military measures. . . .

6. While I was preparing a Note to H.M. the Tsar the next morning to inform him that Vienna, London, and Berlin were agreed about the treatment of affairs, I received the telephones from H.E. the Chancellor that in the night before the Tsar had given the order to mobilize the whole of the Russian army, which was, of course, also meant against Germany, whereas up till then the Southern armies had been mobilized against Austria.

7. In a telegram from London my Ambassador informed me he understood the British Government would guarantee the neutrality of France, and wished to know whether Germany

would refrain from attack. I telegraphed to His Majesty the King personally that mobilisation being already carried out could not be stopped, but if H.M. could guarantee with his armed forces the neutrality of France, I would refrain from attacking her, leave her alone, and employ my troops elsewhere. H.M. answered that he thought my offer was based on a misunderstanding, and as far as I can make out Sir E. Grey never took my offer into serious consideration. He never answered it. Instead he declared that England had to defend Belgian neutrality, which had to be violated by Germany on strategical grounds, news having been received that France was already preparing to enter Belgium and the King of the Belgians having refused my petition for a passage under guarantee of his country's freedom. I am most grateful for the President's message.

(Signed) WILLIAM, I.R.*

Mr. Gerard tells us that the telegram never reached the President, *as it was suppressed by the German Government's request!* And in the *Telegraph* of August 13 His ex-Excellency gave an account of his interview with the Kaiser on October 22, 1915, when " The Emperor said *he would not have permitted the torpedoing of the Lusitania if he had known it,*" adding that " no gentleman would kill so many women and children."

It may interest Mr. Gerard to hear that the Kaiser on, I think, October 24, 1915, condescended to correct a statement by *me* on this same tragic event, the destruction of the *Lusitania.* In my volume, " The Public and Private Life of William II," issued in August, 1915, I repeated what had come to my knowledge—that the Emperor had telegraphed to a gentleman of his acquaintance to warn his son, then in New York, on no account to take passage in the *Lusitania* when the vessel left

---

* It will be seen that the Kaiser misnumbered his paragraphs, of which there were really only *six*, not seven.

America for England. The Kaiser had never previously taken public notice of anything published to his detriment by an English writer either in books or newspapers; but when he learnt from my volume that I had narrated what, as I alleged, he had done, he caused a denial of my assertion to be published in the Berlin semi-official organ, the *Norddeutsche Allgemeine Zeitung*, mentioning me by name, and Reuter, to my complete satisfaction, telegraphed the denial to our papers, some of which (the *Morning Post* and *Reynolds's Newspaper* among others) published it. Of course his denial in print of my statement was not credited by the knowledgable people who read it, and Mr. Gerard could not have regarded as otherwise than a lie the Emperor's verbal assertion that "he would not have permitted the torpedoing of the Lusitania *if he had known it*." Some of us at least are well aware that the crime could not and would not have been committed without the Emperor's knowledge that it was about to be perpetrated and with his full approval. Why, unless the American papers misreported the facts, some of the Kaiser's own representatives in New York and Washington warned their friends not to sail in the ill-fated ship! It is undeniable that nothing whatever of any importance is ever done without the knowledge and approval of the chief criminal. I stand by this assertion, for I know it to be accurate. I suppose it may be termed a coincidence, or something approaching it, that the Kaiser should have had me and my statement in his mind at or about the same time that he was telling Mr. Gerard the lie about the *Lusitania*, for the two dates (October 22 and October 24) are not very remote from each other.

TELEGRAMS EXCHANGED BETWEEN LONDON AND BERLIN, JULY 30–AUGUST 2, 1914

Published in the *Norddeutsche Allgemeine Zeitung* of August 20, 1914 *

No. 1

His Royal Highness Prince Henry of Prussia to His Majesty King George, dated July 30, 1914.

I arrived here yesterday, and have communicated what you were so good as to say to me at Buckingham Palace last Sunday to William, who was very thankful to receive your message.

William, who is very anxious, is doing his utmost to comply with the request of Nicholas to work for the maintenance of peace. He is in continual telegraphic communication with Nicholas, who has to-day confirmed the news that he has ordered military measures which amount to mobilisation, and that these measures were taken five days ago.

We have also received information that France is making military preparations, while we have not taken measures of any kind, but may be obliged to do so at any moment if our neighbours continue their preparations. This would then mean a European war.

If you seriously and earnestly desire to prevent this terrible

---

* Collected Diplomatic Documents Relating to the Outbreak of the European War. London: Printed under the authority of His Majesty's Stationery Office by Harrison & Sons, 45–47 St. Martin's Lane, W.C., Printers in Ordinary to His Majesty. To be purchased, either directly or through any bookseller, from WYMAN & SONS, LTD., 29 Bream's Buildings, Fetter Lane, E.C., and 54 St. Mary Street, Cardiff; or H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottish Branch), 23 Forth Street, Edinburgh; or E. PONSONBY, LTD., 116 Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America, and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C. 1915. Price One Shilling.

Photo Schaarwächter

PRINCE HENRY OF PRUSSIA
(THE KAISER'S BROTHER: GRANDSON OF QUEEN VICTORIA)

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

misfortune, may I propose to you to use your influence on France, and also on Russia, that they should remain neutral. In my view this would be of the greatest use. I consider that this is a certain, and perhaps the only possible, way of maintaining the peace of Europe. I might add that Germany and England should now, more than ever, give each other mutual support in order to prevent a terrible disaster, which otherwise appears inevitable.

Believe me that William is inspired by the greatest sincerity in his efforts for the maintenance of peace. But the military preparations of his two neighbours may end in compelling him to follow their example for the safety of his own country, which otherwise would remain defenceless. I have informed William of my telegram to you, and I hope that you will receive my communication in the same friendly spirit which has inspired it. (Signed) HENRY.

No. 2

His Majesty King George to His Royal Highness Prince Henry of Prussia, dated July 30, 1914.

Thanks for your telegram. I am very glad to hear of William's efforts to act with Nicholas for the maintenance of peace. I earnestly desire that such a misfortune as a European war—the evil of which could not be remedied—may be prevented. My Government is doing the utmost possible in order to induce Russia and France to postpone further military preparations, provided that Austria declares herself satisfied with the occupation of Belgrade and the neighbouring Serbian territory as a pledge for a satisfactory settlement of her demands, while at the same time the other countries suspend their preparations for war. I rely on William applying his great influence in order to induce Austria to accept this proposal. In this way he will prove that Germany and England are working together to prevent what would be an international catastrophe. Please assure William that I am doing all I can, and will continue to do all that lies in my power, to maintain the peace of Europe. (Signed) GEORGE.

No. 3

His Majesty the Emperor William to His Majesty King George, dated July 30, 1914.

Many thanks for your friendly communication. Your proposals coincide with my ideas, and with the communication which I have this evening received from Vienna, and which I have passed on to London. I have just heard from the Chancellor that intelligence has just reached him that Nicholas this evening has ordered the mobilisation of his entire army and fleet. He has not even awaited the result of the mediation in which I am engaged, and he has left me completely without information. I am travelling to Berlin to assure the safety of my eastern frontier, where strong Russian forces have already taken up their position. (Signed) WILLIAM.

No. 4

His Majesty King George to His Majesty the Emperor William, dated August 1, 1914.

Many thanks for your telegram of last night. I have sent an urgent telegram to Nicholas, in which I have assured him of my readiness to do everything in my power to further the resumption of the negotiations between the Powers concerned.

(Signed) GEORGE.

No. 5

German Ambassador at London to the German Imperial Chancellor, dated August 1, 1914.

Sir Edward Grey has just called me to the telephone and has asked me whether I thought I could declare that in the event of France remaining neutral in a German-Russian war we would not attack the French. I told him that I believed that I could assume responsibility for this.

(Signed) LICHNOWSKY.

No. 6

His Majesty the Emperor William to His Majesty King George, dated August 1, 1914.

I have just received the communication of your Government offering French neutrality under the guarantee of Great Britain. To this offer there was added the question whether, under these conditions, Germany would refrain from attacking France. For technical reasons the mobilisation which I have already ordered this afternoon on two fronts—east and west—must proceed according to the arrangements made. A counter-order cannot now be given, as your telegram unfortunately came too late; but if France offers me her neutrality, which must be guaranteed by the English Army and Navy, I will naturally give up the idea of an attack on France and employ my troops elsewhere. I hope that France will not be nervous. The troops on my frontier are at this moment being kept back by telegraph and by telephone from crossing the French frontier.

(Signed) **William.**

No. 7

German Imperial Chancellor to the German Ambassador at London, dated August 1, 1914.

Germany is ready to agree to the English proposal in the event of England guaranteeing, with all her forces, the unconditional neutrality of France in the conflict between Germany and Russia. Owing to the Russian challenge, German mobilisation occurred to-day, before the English proposals were received. In consequence our advance to the French frontier cannot now be altered. We guarantee, however, that the French frontier will not be crossed by our troops until Monday, August 3, at 7 p.m., in case England's assent is received by that time.

(Signed) **Bethmann-Hollweg.**

No. 8

His Majesty King George to His Majesty the Emperor William, dated August 1, 1914.

In answer to your telegram, which has just been received, I believe that there must be a misunderstanding with regard to a suggestion which was made in a friendly conversation between Prince Lichnowsky and Sir Edward Grey, when they were discussing how an actual conflict between the German and the French Army might be avoided, so long as there is still a possibility of an agreement being arrived at between Austria and Russia. Sir Edward Grey will see Prince Lichnowsky early to-morrow morning, in order to ascertain whether there is any misunderstanding on his side.

(Signed) **George.**

No. 9

The German Ambassador at London to the German Imperial Chancellor, dated August 2, 1914.

The suggestions of Sir Edward Grey, based on the desire of creating the possibility of lasting neutrality on the part of England, were made without any previous inquiry of France, and without knowledge of the mobilisation, and have since been given up as quite impracticable.

(Signed) **Lichnowsky.**

THE KNOCKING-DOWN EPISODE: EVIDENCE OF ITS ACCURACY

In the volume "King Edward, the Kaiser, and the War,"* I briefly narrated an incident which was much talked about in London many years ago—how King Edward, goaded to anger by the insults of his nephew, the Kaiser, knocked him down. I did not assert that the incident was a fact within my own knowledge, but merely told it as it was told to me. I added: "There is nothing inherently improbable in the story." On January 15, 1917, the incident was quoted by two London daily journals, and from that date onward it was circulated by a great number of other papers and cabled abroad, so that presumably it has gone all over the world. The sequel shows that it was founded on fact, as I had fully believed it to be when I wrote it.

On January 17 the *Glasgow Herald* reproduced from the *Belfast Evening Telegraph* the following letter, written by Mr. George Sanderson, proprietor of the Prince of Wales Hotel, Belfast, whose father filled a responsible position in Queen Victoria's household:

> I can say with confidence that it [the incident published] did occur, before King Edward's accession to the Throne. My father was with the Royal Family and chief steward to the late Queen Victoria for over twenty-five years. It was not a secret to the household that the Prince of Wales had been sent for and received a severe reprimand for what had taken place. The Kaiser always seemed to get the right side of Her Majesty, who was very much annoyed with the Prince when it occurred. Every one in the know, my father said, was delighted at the Kaiser getting a good thrashing.

---

* London: Grant Richards, Ltd. 1917.

In reply to my inquiry, Mr. Sanderson wrote to me as under:

> PRINCE OF WALES HOTEL, BELFAST,
> *January* 26, 1917.
>
> . . . I well remember my father, who was Queen Victoria's chief steward, and Mr. Backler, who was keeper of Her Majesty's Royal apartments. Both were in the Queen's service over twenty-five years. I remember them crossing over from Osborne House in one of the small Royal yachts; I forget which one; in those days they were called the "milk boats."
>
> My father and Mr. Backler resided next door to each other at Southsea, and were great friends. It was in our house that I heard them talking about the Prince of Wales being sent for by the Queen over what had occurred. I may say that it was very unusual for my father to even mention anything that took place with the Royal Family. That is why I took particular notice of the conversation. I have known him being away for months in the Royal yacht, *Victoria and Albert*, with the Queen and Royal Family, and come home and never mention a word about anything that had taken place. But on this occasion they were talking very freely together and seemed delighted at the Prince giving the Kaiser a good thrashing. He was no favourite with the Royal Household, and was considered a bit of a sneak. In fact, it was their opinion that the Queen listened more to him than to the Prince.—Yours very truly,
>
> GEORGE SANDERSON.

That Queen Victoria was "very much annoyed with the Prince" for chastising her favourite grandson under her own roof was natural, for he had thoroughly ingratiated himself with her, and had never missed an opportunity of what schoolboys call "sucking up" to her. The Queen would never hear a word said against her beloved daughter's eldest son, although for years he had caused his mother the bitterest anguish. Feeling immune, the Kaiser was continually annoying, exasperating, and insulting the uncle of whom he was so jealous, while, certainly on one occasion, he behaved outrageously to his other uncles, the Duke of Connaught and the late Duke of Edinburgh, at a railway station in Germany. I might supplement these outrages by others, on the authority of one who occupied a very high position at the German Court, or Courts (for of course there were two, including that of the late Crown Prince and Crown Princess before they became Emperor and Empress Frederick). The mere mention of the name of this personage would infuriate the Kaiser.

On the day my book was published (January 15, 1917) a writer in a London paper said: "Mr. Legge's story does not fit in very well with what is known of the King's character. . . . My scepticism is further increased by the fact that Mr. G. W. E. Russell tells me that he never heard of the story before, and, as a rule, what Mr. Russell does not know in such matters is not worth knowing."

Some millions of people shared the ignorance of Mr. G. W. E. Russell.

On the following day (January 16) the same London paper printed the following, headed: "Royal Fisticuffs at Windsor. A pair of Angry Princes":

"I am assured by an old special correspondent of a famous London morning paper *à propos* of my paragraph about Mr. Legge's story of King Edward knocking down the Kaiser, that the incident—whether well founded or not—had a very near parallel within his own personal observation.

"It was when the Kaiser—then simply Prince William of Prussia, his grandfather, the Old Emperor, being still alive—was paying a visit to Queen Victoria at Windsor. In 'full rig' as a British military officer, he was met at the station by 'H.R.H.,' wearing a German uniform and *pickelhaube*, and his brother, the Duke of Edinburgh, in the blue and gold of the Royal Navy. The three Princes having duly kissed and embraced, stepped into their landau and set out for the Castle.

"But, on the way, there was a block of some sort outside the quaint old market hall, and when the carriage came to a standstill, it was seen that the Prince of Wales and the young Prussian visitor were having a violent altercation. The English Prince was flushed, the German Prince was deathly pale, and the two were shouting and gesticulating, and actually shaking their fists in each other's faces.

"The poor Duke of Edinburgh, who sat facing them, was greatly agitated, and was doing everything he could to placate the angry pair, and to bring what was really a most painful 'scene' to an end.

"My informant thinks it highly probable that the veteran William Senior—afterwards editor of the *Field*—will remember this affair, which caused quite a commotion among the crowd of sightseers in the Royal borough."

Was this the only occasion on which the Kaiser received "punishment" at the hands of his Uncle Edward? When, in January–February, 1917, people were laughing over the "knocking down" incident, one of my friends, then just returned from Japan, and busily occupied in war-work, said: "I had never heard of the story you have narrated until I read it in your book *; but, in the course of my travels, I have heard in more than one country that King Edward, in a moment of natural anger, 'cuffed' the Kaiser for *striking his youngest son, King George V*."

---

* "King Edward, the Kaiser, and the War." London: Grant Richards, Ltd. 1917.

What I said in my previous volume concerning the "knocking down," I say now about the "cuffing": "There is nothing inherently improbable in the story. It is unlikely that any one would have taken the trouble to invent it, or could have imagined it at a time when the Kaiser was so frequently visiting England, when, moreover, he was being obsequiously flattered by the public and, with a few exceptions, the Press.

CHAPTER XV

KING GEORGE'S PARENTS IN PARIS

"IF THE QUEEN WOULD CLINK GLASSES WITH US!"
"IF EDWARD OF ENGLAND WOULD 'STAND' A DRINK!"*

KING EDWARD and Queen Alexandra did not often give the Parisians the pleasure of seeing them together, but their Majesties (as Duke and Duchess of Lancaster) paid the French capital a private visit in the last days of January and the first week of February, 1907, and the reader will doubtless be interested and amused by comparing this exceptional excursion of the Royal couple with the festivities which marked the official visit of King George and Queen Mary rather more than seven years later.

On the Sunday after their arrival King George's parents dined with their old friends Mr. and Mrs. Standish, and motored to Versailles the next morning. The party comprised Mr. and Mrs. Standish, Edouard Detaille, M. de Nolhac (Keeper of the Museum), Lady Gosford, Miss Charlotte Knollys, Major Ponsonby, Captain Seymour Fortescue, and Mr. R. Lister (Counsellor of H.B.M.'s Embassy). With the exception of the invited guests, no one had any idea that the excursion had been arranged. The King had wished to devote a portion of his first weekday in Paris to going over the celebrated château, and needless to say the illustrious visitors were *d'accord.* The late M. Detaille was specially honoured, for he sat by the side of his august host, and upon the arrival of the party at Versailles the artist undertook to be the cicerone to the visitors, who were conveyed by two Royal automobiles. English detectives and French inspectors of the Sûreté (the Paris "Scotland Yard" force) followed the vehicles in a third auto.

---

* From a popular song, "Tiens! V'là Edouard!" sung in the streets during their Majesties' visit.

At Versailles the party lunched at the Hôtel des Réservoirs (once the residence of Mme. de Pompadour), covers for ten being laid. After the déjeuner the party proceeded to the château, conducted by M. de Nolhac. "The château of Versailles," said the King, when crossing the courtyard, "has many souvenirs for us"; and he recalled the fact that he and his consort had been present at the ball given in 1878 by Marshal de MacMahon in the renowned *Galerie des Glaces.* "It was a marvellous *fête,*" added the Royal lady; "*I remember every detail of it.*"

First to be examined was the *rez-de-chaussée,* where are the new installations, of eighteenth-century date, which Her Majesty had not previously seen. The visitors noted the souvenirs of Marie Antoinette, concerning which the erudite M. de Nolhac had much to say. The apartments of Louis XIV and Louis XV were very attentively examined, not a single souvenir of the French Monarchy escaping the visitors' close scrutiny. In the *Salon de la Reine*, which commands a view of the sheet of water known as *l'eau des Suisses*, the King exclaimed, "What a marvellous sight! I always look at it with the same enthusiasm." "It is unique," said the Queen; "one never gets tired of admiring it."

Next to receive attention was the modern museum with its numerous pictures recalling the epoch of Napoleon III. Most notable are Dubufe's picture the "Congrès de Paris," and Gérôme's "La Cour de Napoléon III à Fontainebleau." "Ce sont là deux chefs-d'œuvres tout à fait remarquables," observed the King to M. de Nolhac. "Quelle vie! Quelle couleur!" Not less attractive to the visitors were the military episodes. Last to be seen were the celebrated canvases of Horace Vernet illustrative of the campaigns of Algeria, and especially of those of the Crimea, "where," said happily the King, after a long and earnest look at the pictures, "the French and English armies laid upon the battlefield the foundations of the *Entente cordiale* of to-day."

It was now time to think about the return journey, and the Royal party left by the Marble Court, saluted by a crowd of onlookers. Before getting into the auto the King said to M. de Nolhac: "Cher monsieur, la Reine et moi nous emportons de notre visite un excellent souvenir. Sous votre conduite éclairée et par le charme de votre haute érudition nous venons de vivre quelques heures délicieuses qui, malheureusement, ont trop rapidement passé." A swift run by way of the Avenue de St. Cloud, Sèvres, and Ville d'Avray (where Gambetta lived and died), and by half-past five the illustrious pair had reached "home," which was the Embassy.

It was not to be expected that the presence of the "Duke and Duchess of Lancaster" in Paris would pass unrecorded by the writers of popular rhymes. When King Edward paid his ever-memorable official visit to the French capital in 1903, the camelots made the welkin (in this instance the boulevards) ring with a ditty of patriotic sentiments, strung together by some Montmartre poet, and sung to the then well-known melody, "Viens, Poupoule." In 1907 the Parisians were tickled with the amusing ballad entitled "Tiens ! V'là Edouard !" which, set to the tune of "La petite Tonkinoise," sold by thousands at five centimes a copy :

Un Monarque
De grand marque
Vient de débarquer chez nous.
C'est y pour l'entent' cordiale ?
Signer dans not' capitale
L'Alliance
De la France
Avec l'Angleterre itou.
Si c'était ça pour le coup,
Tout l'monde y f'rait les yeux doux.

Refrain :

Tiens, v'là Edouard d'Angleterre
Si tu voulais (bis) payer un verre,
Mon vieux copain, ça s'rait chouette,
On n'a pas beaucoup de galette,
On te rendra ça j'espère,
Quand marcheront (bis) bien nos affaires.
Laiss' nous t' fêter comme il faut,
Malgré ton incognito.

This may be roughly Englished, without rhymes, as under :

A Monarch
Of great fame

Has just landed among us.
Is it for the Entente Cordiale ?
To sign in our capital
The Alliance
Of France
With England forthwith ?
If it were so, then, for sure,
Everybody would be pleased.

Refrain :

Look ! there's Edward of England !
If you would stand a drink,
My old comrade, that would be awfully nice,
Because we're not very flush of coin !
We will give it back to you, I hope,
When we are doing better.
Let us give you a good tuck-out,
Despite your incognito !

There was a special verse in honour of Queen Alexandra :

Si la Reine—
Quelle aubaine—
Voulait trinquer avec nous,
Pour l'ex-Princesse de Galles
On dévaliserait les Halles
D' fleurs de France
D' tout' nuances.

[If the Queen—
Oh ! how jolly !—
Would clink glasses with us,
For the ex-Princess of Wales
We would strip the markets
Of the flowers of France
Of all colours.]

The Royal couple heard " The Little Girl of Tonquin " as they were entering Réjane's Theatre.

Their Majesties were entertained at luncheon at the Elysée by the President of the Republic and

Mme. Fallières; made a few calls in the afternoon; in the evening the King went to the Nouveautés to see Pierre Véber's "Vous n'avez rien à déclarer?" and the Queen to the Gymnase, where "Mlle. Josette ma femme" was given, with Mme. Marthe Regnier, whom the august lady highly complimented. Their Majesties went for a long motor drive the next day, and dined with the Ambassadress, Lady Bertie, whose gifted husband was created Baron Bertie of Thame on June 28, 1914, and has happily continued to represent our interests during these fateful war years. Surely he will "see us through!"

CHAPTER XVI

THE GREATEST OF THE GREAT GARDEN PARTIES

> *The Lord Chamberlain is commanded by Their Majesties to invite................ to an Afternoon Party on Saturday, the* 22*nd June*, 1907, *from* 4.30 *to Seven o'clock.*
>
> *Windsor Castle.* *Morning Dress.*

It was at Windsor that the autumn months following her coronation were passed by Queen Victoria in study, State business, and much outdoor exercise. In those days her great recreation was riding in and around the Forest, of which Harrison Ainsworth wrote so attractively. What thrills Herne the Hunter gave us—how we longed to see "Herne's oak" and roam through those enchanted glades! We remember, too, what that renowned landscape gardener, Viollet le Duc, felt when he beheld the Windsor country for the first time. He thought it the most beautiful he had ever seen; and this he said with the glories of Compiègne and St. Cloud fresh in his mind.

Up and down that Long Walk to which the gaze of thousands was turned in 1907 Queen Victoria used to canter by the hour. Here one day the Equerry in attendance met his daughters, who were also riding. The Queen bade him go and have a chat with them, and when he rejoined his Royal mistress she said, "Well, Colonel, and what had your daughters to say to you?" "Some trifling remarks about the weather, and other trivial topics, please your Majesty," was the reply. "Yes; and what did they say about me?" asked the Queen. "Your Majesty's good looks certainly formed part of the conversation." "I confess," rejoined Her Majesty, "that the manner in which one of your daughters looked at me attracted my attention, and I am very desirous to know what she said concerning me." The poor Equerry entreated to be excused, but the Queen good-humouredly insisted upon hearing "all about it." "Then, Ma'am," said the Colonel, "your command shall be frankly obeyed, as I know would best please you. My daughter, after remarking upon your Majesty's healthful countenance, and your apparent delight in horsemanship, added that it would render this agreeable exercise more salutary, as well as wear a more graceful appearance, could you be induced to overcome the small stoop which is habitual to you, and to sit perfectly erect upon your horse." Her Majesty smilingly replied, "I felt convinced that I had in some way or other fallen under the young lady's criticism, and was very anxious to profit by her observations." (The Colonel doffed his hat, and bowed low.) "And now, my dear Colonel, I am equally obliged by your daughter's hint and by your frankness in repeating it by my desire, and I will show you that I am not unmindful of either favour." Henceforward Her Majesty took pains to sit very upright in the saddle, which was all that was wanting to render her an accomplished rider. "Her Majesty," said the Colonel to the friend to whom he narrated the incident, "is, indeed, at heart a horsewoman, and thinks that no lady looks to greater advantage than when she is seated on her horse."

When I told this little story to one of the favoured guests of their Majesties, I was asked if I had ever seen Queen Alexandra on horseback. I certainly had, and I recalled the fact that "the Princess" was singular, because she invariably rode on the near, instead of on the off, side, although this little peculiarity did not detract from her delightful appearance in the saddle. King Edward was a fairly frequent figure in the Row "when he was Prince," and I recall him, on his powerful "mount," as I saw him scores of times in the "Route du Roi," in frock coat and tall hat, and never without a cigar. Christopher Sykes and one or two other intimates were usually of the little cavalcade in the Row, and took leave of "the Prince" at the Park gates. If it was not too hot, "H.R.H." would then enjoy a canter down Constitution Hill and along the Mall to Marlborough House. Nowadays we seldom see the Monarch in the saddle. As I noted the Royal host saying agreeable things to his guests at the *fête-champêtre* there rose up before me, as one observes shapes in a dream, the figure of a slim young man riding along a Worcestershire lane with a very distinguished-looking foreign personage who was remarkable, to my unsophisticated gaze, because of his "imperial" and well-kept moustache. The two horsemen wending their way from a gala "meet" of the "Worcestershire" back to Wood

Norton were "H.R.H." and S.A.R. the Duc d'Aumale. And that was—I will not say how many years ago; anyway, it was less than a century!

I had seen Windsor streets under many aspects—when the Great Queen reviewed "Sir Garnet's" Ashantee forces, when Royal weddings were celebrated, and so on; but never was the old borough the scene of such turmoil as on this Saturday afternoon in 1907. Those guests who went down by the "G.W.R." and walked to the Castle—or, rather, pushed and struggled, and sometimes fought their way—were wise people. The "squash" of carriages, private and public cabs ("growlers" included), and "autos" was indescribable; and I did not wonder that hundreds of fair women, in what are termed "lovely" toilettes, and men arrayed, as the American humorist's countrymen have it, "fit to kill," leapt petulantly from their vehicles and elbowed their way afoot "up the Castle Hill." Most of those who kept in their vehicles sat in them by the half-hour looking the picture of despair; and, sad to say, Prince and Princess Christian were among them.

It was wellnigh pandemonium all along the route: snorting, chafing horses; perspiring coachmen, muttering dreadful things *sotto voce*; angry shouts of "Where are you comin' to?" "Pull back a bit!" autocars pulsating and vibrating, while their occupants fumed and fretted, to no avail; and the sweet air made malodorous by the reek of petrol. Confusion was rendered "worse confounded" by the pavements being taken possession of, and held against all comers, by spectators, who had flocked in from all the countryside. I have been in Russian and German and Spanish streets on days of extraordinary festivity, but never have I withstood greater, fiercer hustling than on that Saturday afternoon in "the month of roses." How one envied those who had come early, and had entered the Castle precincts with unruffled tempers and untorn finery! And there were many such. Those who tried to get away in good time found themselves confronted by masses of late arrivals—battalions of them; and it was with a feeling of thankfulness that all stepped out of the return expresses on to the platform at Paddington—a haven of comparative tranquillity after emerging from the maelstrom of Windsor.

I was not at all desirous to see how the American humorist comported himself before their Majesties; but I had the gratification of reading in one of the ha'penny prints that, when he was presented to the King, he "kept his hat on," for the reason that he is "delightfully unconventional"; also that "the humorist drove his points home by patting the Sovereign on the arm and shoulder, like an old and confidential friend. The King's laugh was long and loud and hearty." It may well have been, if the incident of "Mark Twain's Chat" was faithfully recorded; for both at the circus and at the pantomime I frequently observed that "the King's laugh was long and loud and hearty." A Sovereign must always have in remembrance Beaumarchais' stinging epigram: "Je me hâte de rire de tout . . . de peur d'être obligé d'en pleurer."

One of the papers which does not consider Royalty and the aristocracy sacrosanct referred to the complaints of some of the party-gòers that they were "called upon" to pay five shillings for the first-class return ticket. If there really were any such parsimonious curmudgeons, it may be presumed that they expected not only a "free ticket," but a Royal brougham to take them from their Brixton villas to Paddington and back.

People beguiled the homeward journey with reminiscent talk of the "tea" given by the Great Queen at Buckingham Palace in July 1900—only six months before the nation mourned her loss. Many of those who were at Windsor on Saturday remembered that Queen Victoria, "the Princess" by her side, was driven about the beautiful grounds which extend the whole length of Constitution Hill, even to Grosvenor Place, and that now and again she would dispatch an emissary to bring to her some one to whom she wished to say a few words. Not a few of Saturday's guests had been "among those present" at the afternoon party given by their Majesties at Windsor in the June of 1905, on the eve of the marriage of the Duke and Duchess of Connaught's elder daughter to Prince Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden. I could tell of many amusing incidents. When eight or nine thousand people of various ranks and conditions in the social scale are gathered together there is bound to be a good deal of fun; and those who did not figure in this *omnium gatherum* may rest assured that there were not wanting scores of humorous scenes. The shower which fell just before five o'clock caused more merriment than anything else. It was a genuine case of *sauve qui peut*—a "go-as-you-please" scurry to the tents; to which only the pencils of Forain,

Photo Florman

Prince Charles of Sweden (third son of the late King Oscar), II, his Consort, Princess Ingeborg of Denmark (Sister of the King of Norway), and their children

& Denmark

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

the Vebers, and the artists of the *Vie Parisienne*, the *Rire*, and the *Assiette* could have done full justice.

Many eminent *littérateurs* and super-excellent histrions "could not understand" why the post failed to bring them cards; and their disappointment was fully shared by hundreds of worthy folk who, as they phrase it, "move in the best society." But if the number invited had been 28,500 instead of only 8500 there would still have been a few thousands left to emit the bitter cry of disappointment.

The "show guest" of the fête was His late Majesty Chulalongkorn I, who arrived in London from Paris on the previous day, slept at the Legation in Ashburn Place, and stayed at Windsor Castle from Saturday until Monday. He was King of Siam of the North and South, and Sovereign of the Dependencies of the Laos, the Malays, and of the Karens, and Lord of the White Elephant. His correct designation (and I trust my readers will remember it) was Prabat Somdetch Phra Paramindr Maha Chulalongkorn Patindr Tepa Maha Mongkut Pra Chula Chom Klao Chow Hu Hua (and finally Chulalongkorn I).

The "Sovereign Arbitrator of the Flux and Reflux," "Brother to the Moon," and "Half-brother to the Sun," was the fifth of the Chakrakri dynasty, which dates from 1782, and was founded by a Prime Minister who selected his own man for Ruler. His father was King Paramindr Maha Mongkut (or Mougkont), who died in 1868; and his mother, Princess Sowapa Pongsi. The Monarch of 1907 was born at Bangkok, the capital, in 1853.

He had forty-one Queens, and was the father of 100 sons. There is a Chief Queen. "It is," we are assured by an erudite author, "the custom of Siamese aristocracy to dedicate its most attractive daughter to the service of His Majesty," and our authority adds, cryptically, "It is impossible to give greater detail of His Majesty's domestic life."

His son, the then Crown Prince (now King), Chowfa Maha Vajiravudh, was born on January 1, 1881, and was in 1907 *ad interim* Regent at Bangkok. He was educated at Eton and Oxford (Christ Church), passed through Sandhurst, held a commission in an English regiment, and spent twelve years among us. At the end of July, 1917, Siam—even Siam—declared war against Germany! When His Majesty was Crown Prince he distinguished himself by writing in English an historical work, "The War of the Polish Succession." Some of his brothers were at Cambridge, where they became very popular.

Those who were honoured by personal presentation to Siam's late Sovereign found him a ready talker, asking all manner of questions about the state of affairs in the very much disturbed parts of the Midi, and about the rioting, accompanied, alas, with bloodshed, at Oporto and Lisbon. His Majesty's knowledge of English made him feel quite at home; he had seemingly paid little attention to French. The King was rejoiced to be once more at Windsor, and he reminded some of those who surrounded him at the fête that he was Queen Victoria's guest at the Castle in the autumn of 1897, after he had been entertained by Her Majesty at Osborne for the Cowes week. "It was the Prince of Wales, who was then Duke of York, who received me when I landed at Portsmouth ten years ago," said the King to some ladies, who were near him in the Indian tent. Men said to each other, *sotto voce*, that the Lord of the White Elephant had found a first-rate tailor, and certainly His Majesty's frock coat was a model garment. A good-humoured smile hovered on his lips all the afternoon, and his courteous manner, regal bearing, and suavity of speech made him troops of friends.

Very many had not seen Princess Henry of Battenberg since her return from Spain until that Saturday. She was radiant, and looked the picture of maternal happiness as she acknowledged the congratulations which were showered upon her anent the happy event at Madrid. People were saying that Princess Henry had been looking through the MS. (some said the proof-sheets) of M. Paoli's reminiscences of Queen Victoria.

CHAPTER XVII

THE KING'S ACTIVITIES OUTLINED: 1910–1917

1910

His Majesty held his first Council and made a Declaration to his People [May 7, the day after King Edward's death].

Sent Messages to the Navy, Army, India, and the Houses of Parliament; and wrote a Letter to his People.

Received the Kaiser, who attended King Edward's funeral.

Visited Aldershot for a week, and before leaving issued Message to the troops.

Visited Portsmouth, inspecting the various establishments, and issuing a Message expressing his satisfaction with all he had seen.

Visited Torbay, where he reviewed Fleet.

Visited the London Hospital.

Presented at Marlborough House Medals to miners and others in connection with the colliery disaster at Whitehaven, and with other similar accidents; and also gave Board of Trade Medals to coastguardsmen and sailors for rescue work.

At Balmoral inspected detachment of 2nd Queen's Own Rifles of Canada.

Visited King's Lynn.

1911

Opened Parliament.

Attended Festival of Empire at Crystal Palace.

Entertained (later) 100,000 school children at Crystal Palace.

Unveiled Queen Victoria Memorial in the Mall, *in the presence of the Kaiser* (it was *his final visit to England*) and Kaiserin. The King knighted Mr. Brock, the sculptor.

Visited Spithead and reviewed the Fleet.

Attended gala performance at the Opera.

Entertained 6000 persons at a garden party at Buckingham Palace, and attended gala performance at His Majesty's Theatre.

Visited Norwich for the Royal Agricultural Show.

Attended Thanksgiving Service at St. Paul's and a luncheon at the Guildhall.

Entertained 100,000 elementary school children at Crystal Palace.

Presented medals to Indian and Colonial soldiers at Buckingham Palace.

Visited Ireland.

Visited Carnarvon for the investiture of the Prince of Wales, who, after the ceremony, briefly addressed the concourse of high officials and spectators.

Visited Bangor, opened new buildings of University College, and (with the Queen) laid foundation stones of new National Library of Wales at Aberystwith.

Visited Edinburgh.

Received deputations and addresses from the Convocations of Canterbury and York.

Visited Epsom.
Visited Ascot.
Visited the City.
Visited Norwich.
Received the Dominion Premiers.
Reviewed the Territorial Army (Officers' Training Corps, numbering 17,000) in Windsor Great Park.
Reviewed in the same Park 30,000 Boy Scouts.
Unveiled in Royal Military Chapel, Wellington Barracks, memorial to King Edward VII erected by officers and men of the Brigade of Guards.
Left England (with the Queen) for India.
Held Coronation Durbar at Delhi, and there laid first stone of India's new capital.

1912

Left India for England.
Attended Thanksgiving Service at St. Paul's.
Opened Parliament.
Was presented with the "Georges' Gift."
Inspected the Fleet.
Visited Portland.
Visited Horticultural Show.
His Birthday celebrated throughout the Empire.
Witnessed the "Derby"; his horse Pintadeau placed fourth.
Reviewed the National Reservists.
Visited Harrow School.
Birthday Honours List published June 14.
Reviewed St. John Ambulance Brigade.
Visited South Wales.
Visited Bristol.

Visited Palace Theatre.

Visited Yorkshire.

Visited Wentworth Woodhouse (Earl Fitzwilliam's) and reviewed 4000 National Reservists in Park.

At Rotherham descended a coal-pit, talked to miners, and hewed coal.

Visited scene of explosion at Cadeby Colliery.

Visited Wakefield, Dewsbury, Halifax, and Huddersfield (where the King unveiled statue of King Edward VII).

Visited Winchester.

Visited the Albert Docks.

Opened "The King's Dock" at Immingham, near Grimsby.

Presented (at Balmoral) Bronze Medal to fishermen for saving life at sea in 1912.

Attended Army Manœuvres in East Anglia (staying at Trinity College, Cambridge), and spoke at Conference on Army matters held in Hall of that College.

1913

Inspected H.M.S. *New Zealand.*

Opened Parliament.

Opened new reservoir at Chingford.

Visited Woolwich Arsenal.

Visited Crewe; inspected potteries.

Reviewed Brigade of Guards in Hyde Park.

Visited Aldershot. Stayed (with Queen and daughter) at the Royal Pavilion for a week.

Inspected, during visit to Aldershot, the Royal Military College at Camberley, and presented Cadets with new colours. Attended a reunion of old comrades of Munster Fusiliers.

Visited Germany. Present at wedding (*Berlin*) *of Kaiser's only daughter* with Prince Ernest Augustus of Cumberland (nephew of Queen Alexandra).

Visited Eton, viewed procession of boats, and returned to Windsor in State barge.

Visited Royal Agricultural Show, Bristol.

Visited Lancashire. King and Queen guests of Lord and Lady Derby at Knowsley, visiting St. Helens, Southport, Preston, Blackpool, Colne, Nelson, Burnley, Accrington, Wigan, Chorley, Blackburn, Bolton, Liverpool (opening the Gladstone Dock), Ashton, Oldham, "and other places!" On the sixth day (Sunday) attended in St. George's Hall, Liverpool, a service for Territorials, who marched past. On the seventh day the Royal progress closed with a visit to Manchester and Salford.

Wrote letter of appreciation to Lord Derby, expressing a hope that the people would regard the title of "Duke of Lancaster" "as the symbol of a real and homely relation, strengthening their bond with their Sovereign; and he desired his health to be drunk under that title in Lancashire in future."

Reviewed London Territorial Forces in Hyde Park.

Gave Garden Party at Buckingham Palace (July 19) to 5000 teachers and other representatives of education.

Laid foundation-stone of Australian Commonwealth Offices in the Strand.

Decorated members of Antarctic Expedition with Antarctic Medal and clasp. Lady Scott and three other widows of men who had perished also received the medal.

Opened new buildings of King's College Hospital at Denmark Hill.

Inspected National Reservists at Chichester.

Visited (guests of Earl Spencer at Althorp) Army "Exercises" (not "Manœuvres") in Bucks and Northants, directed by Field-Marshal Sir John French. Witnessed a great "battle" near Daventry. Attended conference, at which Sir John criticised the work done. The King closed the proceedings by a speech, expressing his deep interest in the welfare and work of his troops.

Attended a "Good Samaritan" performance at the Coliseum, organised by Madame Sarah Bernhardt and Lord Lonsdale in aid of Charing Cross Hospital and the French Hospital in London.

1914

Opened Parliament.

Offered prize for a yacht race at Panama.

Visited Knowsley.

Visited Cheshire.

Visited the National Institute for the Blind.

Opened new buildings at the Leys School, Cambridge.

Opened Edward VII Galleries, British Museum.

His Birthday (June 3) marked by the receipt from elementary school children of letters of greeting written by themselves.

Birthday Honours List published on June 22.

Visited Welbeck Abbey.

Visited Hull.

Visited Scotland.

Present at Naval Review, Spithead; said to be intended as a world-demonstration of our sea-strength. This event was on July 18, 19, and 20. There were no indications in the Press that war was impending; but a fortnight later the British Ultimatum reached Berlin, and was treated with contemptuous silence.

Opened the Conference at Buckingham Palace on Home Rule (July 21), and delivered the speech containing the words: "To-day the cry of civil war is on the lips of the most responsible and sober-minded of my people."

Sent message of gratitude to the Overseas Dominions in reply to the messages from their respective Governments concerning the war which (August 2) was then imminent.

Message to the Expeditionary Force then (August 18) concentrating in France.

Received the Belgian (War) Mission.

Message to the Governments and Peoples of our Self-governing Dominions (published September 9).

Message to Princes and Peoples of Indian Empire.

Visited the troops in France (November 29–December 5); inspected our Force, and issued an Order to the Army. [*This was the first of four visits to our Western Front.*]

1915

Visited the Indian wounded at Brighton.

Held investiture at Buckingham Palace and decorated members of Expeditionary Force.

Received at Buckingham Palace M. Delcassé (then

French Foreign Minister) and M. Bark (then Russian Minister of Finance).

Visited officers and men who had been exchanged for German prisoners.

Visited a portion of the Grand Fleet, and a month later part of that Fleet at Harwich and Felixstowe.

Visited the Horse Show at the Agricultural Hall, Islington.

Commanded that " no wines, spirits, or beer should be consumed in any of his Houses after the next day " (April 6).

Visited Royal Small Arms Factory at Enfield Lock, accompanied by Lord Kitchener.

Attended matinée at Palace Theatre in aid of Officers' Families Fund.

Ordered his birthday to be celebrated only by flying of flags.

Directed names of (the late) Emperor of Austria, German Emperor, King of Würtemberg, German Crown Prince, and other German Princes to be struck off roll of Knights of the Garter.

Attended concert at Albert Hall in aid of British Red Cross Society and Order of St. John of Jerusalem.

Inspected Elswick Works of Armstrong, Whitworth and Co. on the Tyne, and reviewed troops near Newcastle.

Ordered publication of Birthday Honours (Lord Kitchener a K.G.).

Visited again Grand Fleet.

Visited several large factories at Birmingham engaged in production of war material.

Presented in grounds of Buckingham Palace their first colours to Welsh Guards.

Attended Service at St. Paul's Cathedral on Aug. 4 to inaugurate second year of war by invoking God's help.

Visited Shorncliffe district, accompanied by Lord Kitchener, to inspect Canadian troops.

Visited several munition works at Leeds, and addressed wounded soldiers.

Went to France to visit Army (*his second visit to our Western Front*—October 22).

Thrown from his horse while inspecting the Army in France and severely bruised (October 28).

King's Letter (October 23) appealed to " men of all classes to come forward voluntarily and take their share in the fight."

1916

Visited Star and Garter Hospital for disabled soldiers at Richmond.

Received General Cadorna, Chief of Italian Army, at Buckingham Palace.

Presented £100,000 to the Treasury.

Commanded issue of Birthday Honours.

Attended Memorial Service for late Lord Kitchener at St. Paul's Cathedral.

Visited Convalescent Hospital at Woodcote Park, Epsom, and County of London War Hospital at Epsom.

Addressed (at midnight on August 3) Message to Sovereigns and Heads of Allied States, including one to the King of the Belgians, " renewing his declaration that Allies would continue the struggle until Belgium was liberated."

Visited the Armies in France (*for the third time*), remaining with them for a week.

Inspected the new "Household Battalion" formed from the three reserve regiments of Household Cavalry under command of Col. Wyndham Portal.

Ordered publication of "Resignation" Honours (Mr. Asquith retiring from and Mr. Lloyd George accepting Premiership).

Conferred a G.C.B. on M. Sazonoff, the Diplomatist, formerly attached to the Russian Embassy in London.

1917

This year the King beat his previous records. Only a faint idea of his untiring efforts for the public weal can be gathered from what is briefly recorded in this volume. On the 17th of September His Majesty began a four days' visit to the merchant shipbuilding yards on the Clyde and the principal steel-rolling mills of Scotland, the tour ending at Paisley on the 20th. A feature of the visit was a public investiture and presentation of medals by the King at Ibrox Park, Glasgow, where he was received by Lieutenant-General Sir J. S. Ewart, K.C.B., G.O.C., Central Scottish Command. No Sovereign ever received a more enthusiastic reception than that accorded to King George during his visit to Scotland. His Majesty dined and slept in his own railway carriage and in order to get to Glasgow in good time travelled all night.

> Will ye no come back again ?
>   Will ye no come back again ?
> *Better lo'ed ye canna be—*
>   Will ye no come back again ? *

---

* Chorus of the old Scottish ballad, "Bonnie Prince Charlie," sung by the workers during the Royal visit.

This Scottish tour, the third during the most momentous reign in our Island story, marked what, by a permissible figure of speech, may be truly termed the apotheosis of King George V. It was at " Glasgae," as many will remember, that Mr. Lloyd George delivered the most telling of his countless speeches (June 29, 1917). That furiously eloquent address held the nation for two reasons : (1) its splendidly optimistic tone, and (2) its insistence upon the valuable and unceasing service rendered by the Sovereign to the Empire. " The Army," said the Prime Minister, " is invincible. It cannot be beaten. And the Army now is the people. The *moral* of the nation must be kept up, and I cannot see any slacking or indolence anywhere. *There is one man who is working as hard as any man in this country, and he is the Sovereign of this Realm.* [At this point the vast audience cheered and cheered again vociferously. They rose, and, led by the playing of the organ, sang the National Anthem, afterwards cheering again.] Mr. Lloyd George continued : I am quite sure His Majesty the King will appreciate the fact that the citizens of Glasgow realise the contribution he is making to the work of the nation under these trying conditions."

In a leading article on the Prime Minister's address the *Daily Chronicle* paid His Majesty this generous tribute, over which the Wellsian faction possibly ruminated with mingled feelings :

> The audience sometimes contributes as much to the significance of a speech as the speaker himself, and so it was when Mr. Lloyd George, by a passing mention of the King, evoked in the most democratic city of the Empire a striking demon-

stration of devotion and gratitude. The great audience, we are told, cheered again and again, and interrupted the speech and their own pleasure in it to sing the National Anthem. As the Prime Minister justly said, the King is working as hard for the national cause as any man in the country. He has just completed a visit to the Fleet, which, with all possible mitigations in the case of the Sovereign, involved the discomforts of long land and sea journeys in almost wintry weather, a considerable number of minor voyages from ship to ship, the minimum of sleep for a week, and brief and hurried meals. If his subjects have not been adequately informed of this inspired tour of the King, which has given the greatest pleasure in the Navy, it is owing to the lack of method and co-ordination on the part of those Government offices which now have the distribution of the public news, a lack which displayed itself in flooding the newspapers with important official reports just when the King's movements were to have been described. But the Glasgow demonstration is significant of more than the gratitude of the people. It expresses our national unity, and reminds us of *the advantage of having a symbol of our greatest common measure of agreement.* Germany would be a more potent enemy than she is if the head of her State were not now himself a factor of controversy, internal and external. In that respect, at least, our chief enemy is handicapped as against Great Britain.

At the time those loyal and thrilling lines were written there had been no announcement of the Royal intention to spend the best part of a week in Scotland wholly devoted to the inspection of the shipyards and manufactories engaged in the Herculean task of satisfying the needs of our forces on all fronts. But that the visit had been resolved upon may be taken for certain. It is not improbable that the Prime Minister's address was in the nature of an *avant-coureur.* At the least it served to direct the attention of the Scotch of all classes, the operative class in particular, to the fact which can never be repeated too often, that the Sovereign is, that the Sovereigns are, incessantly occupied in forwarding the stupendous and righteous cause which for upwards of three years has taken possession of the minds of all within the bounds of the Empire.

In most felicitous terms the *Scotsman*, in a leading article, declared that the first day of the King's visit had an auspicious opening when he inspected important establishments in Greenock and Port-Glasgow :

> By his arduous and self-sacrificing labours since the beginning of the war, in the fulfilment of which he has faced many discomforts and braved many dangers on sea and land, the King has exalted the high office which he adorns and at the same time brought Royalty nearer to the hearts of the people. During these three years of war, when all human institutions have been passed through the fire, Kingship has been tested as severely as any. . . . In this country Monarchy has come through the test more firmly rooted in the affections and understanding of the people than ever before. . . . The people of this country are fortunate in the enjoyment of a limited Monarchy, which combines every advantage of Republican government along with merits attaching to itself alone ; and we are fortunate at the present time above everything else in the person and character of our Sovereign. The duties of Kingship have never been more zealously, more tactfully, more courageously performed than by King George at this crisis of our national existence. . . .

Conversations between the King and the toilers of both sexes were frequent. At some engine and boiler works His Majesty seemed surprised to find so comparatively few men and so many girls and young women in khaki overalls. How long had Agnes Kerrigan been at this work ? "Three months in this shop," was the answer ; and to other questions she replied that she liked the work (fifty-four hours weekly) and "liked working along with the men." At the shipyard and engine works of a large company the King spoke to several men in khaki. Asked "How are you getting on?" a man who had been invalided home from Gallipoli and given the Distinguished Conduct Medal, answered cheerily: "All right!" After chats with others His Majesty came to an old worker, aged seventy-nine, who for forty-five years was a Volunteer and bandsman. "I believe," queried the King, "you played before Queen Victoria?" "Yes, that was twenty-eight years ago, at Glasgow; and three times before King Edward." "It is a good record," said His Majesty.

The events of the visit were very fully and ably recorded by the *Scotsman* and the *Glasgow Herald*, and copies of both journals will be kept by many people for the benefit of the younger generation, who will find in these Press annals in the years to come a striking chapter in Scottish history and one not to be skipped. The men and women of the future will read how the King detached himself from his unremitting toil in the Palace and in the ancient Castle of the Royal House of Windsor, and "spared no trouble in investigating at first hand the progress" then "being made in the Clyde and Lanarkshire areas in pressing forward the completion of merchant ships," and how "he received a number of Glasgow men and women who had been aboard torpedoed vessels." That incident alone furnished that "touch of nature which makes the whole world kin." This it is to have a "natural" King, one who, like George V, is nearest to the hearts and aspirations of his people when he mingles with them "like one of themselves," a phrase which always rises to their lips when he and they are rubbing shoulders on either side of the Border. This moving scene at Glasgow Central Station (September 20) was

> an appropriate climax to a tour the main object of which was to see how the losses in boats were being made good, but which also was largely concerned with the welfare of the workers who were carrying out the task. Personnel was a keynote as much as processes. It was fitting, therefore, that the King should see face to face the men and the women who had come safely through the terrors of torpedoing and express to them his congratulations on their escape. . . . The men and women of the crews he inspected were drawn up in line, and with four stewardesses, two of whom were aboard the ill-fated *Lusitania*, he passed some friendly words.*

Before leaving Glasgow, His Majesty handed this autograph letter to the Lord Provost, Sir Thomas Dunlop:

THE ROYAL TRAIN,
September 20, 1917.

To the Right Honourable the Lord-Lieutenant and the Lord Provost of the County of the City of Glasgow.

On the conclusion of my third visit to your city in a period of little more than three years I feel that you cannot regard me as a stranger. I am pleased to see that, if possible, there is more determination than ever in the spirit and fortitude o the people of this famous industrial centre t support the heavy task of my sailors and soldiers.

The security of our food-supply cannot be take as a matter of course, and the main object of m tour was for the purpose of showing the great interest I take in the efforts of those employed in the shipyards and steel mills to maintain the strength and efficiency of our mercantile marine, on which the very existence of this country depends.

---

* *Scotsman*, September 21, 1917.

For it is only by the full development of all latent resources, combined with the co-operation and goodwill of the industrial community, that we can expect such a satisfactory issue of this war as will give us, by God's help, the blessings of a guaranteed and lasting peace.

I carry away inspiring memories of Glasgow and Clydeside and of the warm-hearted welcome from the inhabitants of this important part of my kingdom.

GEORGE R.I.

[⁂ The lengthened visit of the King and Queen to our troops in France, and other events of 1917, are referred to in vol. ii.]

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

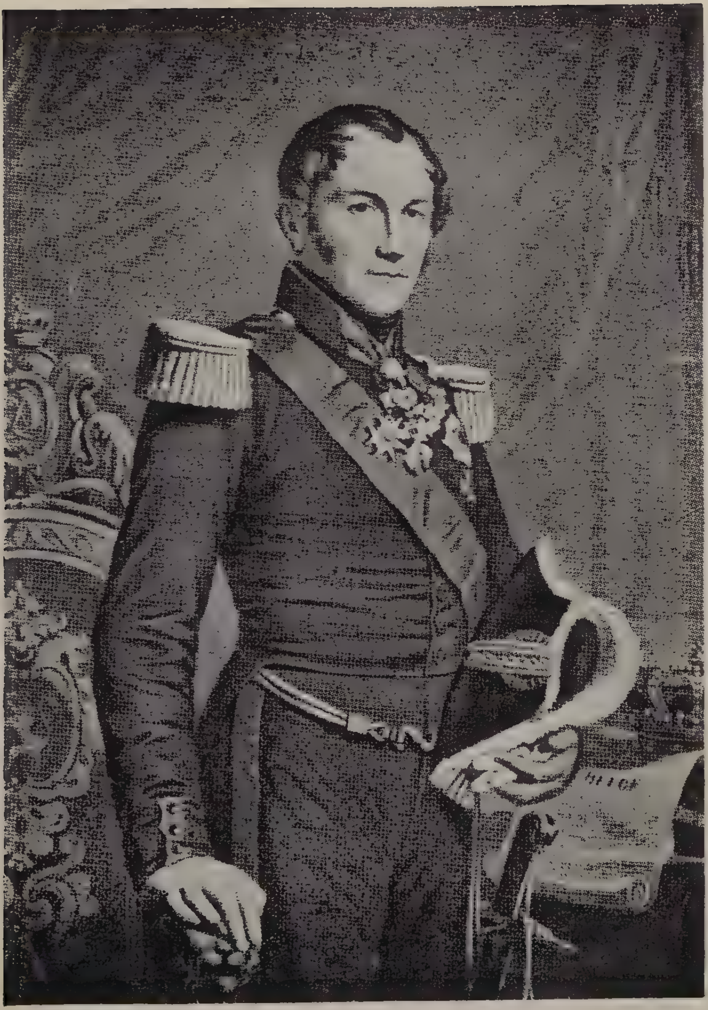
CHAPTER XVIII

THE CORONATION

WITH the King whom I am going to see solemnly crowned I spent several days five-and-twenty years ago. He was a young man then, and I was not yet an old one. It was at the wedding of her whom we still call Princess Amélie, and who was about to become Duchess of Braganza.* I accompanied the Comte de Paris. He was an officer on a warship, then at Lisbon, and represented Queen Victoria. The Prince, who at that time was still known as Duke of York, was then twenty. He lives in my memory as a young man of average height, somewhat grave and silent, perhaps rather timid, but *bon enfant* when he was at ease. He was on very intimate terms with the Duc d'Orléans and his sisters, Princess Amélie and Princess Hélène, the future Duchess d'Aoste. I believe they all *tutoyaient* each other. Dare I mention here a comical anecdote? The day after the Royal wedding an excursion to Cintra and the Peña was made up for the amusement of the young people. I shared the superintendence of the party with my faithful *camarade de service*, the Comtesse d'Albyville. We visited the two palaces and the day ended with a

---

* The ex-Queen of Portugal, now (1917) residing at Richmond, Surrey.



THE LATE LEOPOLD I, KING OF THE BELGIANS, UNCLE OF QUEEN VICTORIA, WHOSE MARRIAGE HE ARRANGED DESPITE THE OPPOSITION OF KING WILLIAM IV

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

donkey-ride. The young Prince [King George V] had a very obstinate donkey, which with both hands he vainly urged to "go on." I offered him my "mount," which he declined. Five minutes afterwards my donkey stumbled, and I was thrown over his head and rolled in the dust. The Prince roared with laughter and there was much "chaff" over it until we separated.

Alas, how distant are these memories, and how many griefs have come, like a veil of black gauze, to conceal them: the deaths of the Comte de Paris and the Duke of Clarence, and finally the terrible drama which plunged into eternal woe the French Princess [Queen Amélie] whom we loved so much and whom we believed was destined to the happiest future! When I see King George V enter the Abbey so unlike the adolescent of former times, I believe my thoughts will revert to these sorrows rather than to the party at Cintra; for sad souvenirs are faithful companions which seldom abandon us and never for long.

June 22, 1911.

The English were right about the weather. It looked threatening this morning, but it cleared up. There was a slight shower, but no rain fell upon the Royal procession. There are, however, clouds and a cold wind. It is not "Queen's weather"; but let us hope that this grey day is not a presage for the reign of George V. The Abbey doors are to be closed at nine o'clock. Horse and auto traffic will be suspended from 8.30. They told me that there would be such an immense number of vehicles that I thought it wise to start for the Abbey at

6.45. Thanks to the admirable arrangements of the police it took me only twenty minutes to get from the Marble Arch to the Abbey. Arrived there one was received with the greatest politeness by gentlemen in black velvet with silver buttons, or by officers (at least I suppose so from their scarlet coats) who all carry a wand. One passes from one to the other through numerous passages and up stairs. One would say that these gentlemen were young men of good family assisting their father to receive his guests.

At last I reach my place, and at the first glance I see that I have an excellent position. I am in the second row of the first gallery beyond the right wing of the transept, opposite that which will be presently occupied by the suites of the foreign Princes. I see the altar and the two thrones on which the King and Queen will be seated; so I shall lose nothing of the ceremony. In my seat I find printed accounts of the ceremonies, with the names of all who will take part in them, even the humblest; and of the form and order of the service. More attention to the *invités* could not possibly have been given. The gallery in which I sit is the King's. I suppose I owe the honour of my invitation to be present less to that *rencontre* in Portugal, which His Majesty will certainly not remember, than to some pages written by me in 1910 about his father which, they tell me, did not displease the present Sovereign.*

I am one of the first to arrive in this gallery, which is filled by degrees, principally by ladies of all ages in very elegant toilettes, all *décolletées*, some even making a liberal display of magnificent English shoulders; which, in a church, rather surprises my French eyes. I think the uniform of the Institut, despite its green palms, must make a somewhat sombre blot amidst these robes, mostly white. I serve as a foil to them. It is not yet eight o'clock. The first ceremonies do not begin until about nine; I have therefore ample time to look about me, and never have I so much regretted my shortness of sight as now. But, from the first *coup d'œil*, I am struck by the general aspect of the scene, which is in perfect good taste. It was not easy to erect in a Gothic church galleries which should not be in discord with the lines of the building and to decorate them in a manner which should not conflict with the severe style of the Abbey. This double problem has been admirably solved. I cannot better describe the effect produced than by borrowing these lines from the *Temps*: "It is an immense symphony of grey and blue. The floor is covered with a great deep-blue carpet. The shade is softened all along the walls, which are hung with damask of a lighter blue. The upper steps of the galleries are covered with a light blue-grey, and thus one arrives insensibly at the grey of the old stone. In this decorative *ensemble* there is only one other note of colour—in the Coronation chairs, of old red, standing upon old Persian carpets of a neutral tint. Deep is the religious and royal majesty of this decoration." I find here the fine colouring of the great English painters. In taste, in proportion, and in harmony of tone it is perfect.

---

* Comte d'Haussonville refers to that charming appreciation of our late Sovereign which graced the pages of my volume "King Edward in His True Colours."

By slow degrees the choir, in which we are seated, fills. Of what passes in the other parts of the Abbey we see absolutely nothing, nor will the six thousand and odd spectators who will fill the building presently see more than we do, except with the eyes of faith, for an immense screen closes the entrance to the choir. I see enter successively the peers and peeresses, whose gallery is opposite to ours; the peers' tribune being on the same line I cannot see them. Each peer wears a large mantle—each peeress a robe with a long train, the whole in red velvet, with a tippet of ermine. Their coronets, which neither peers nor peeresses may wear until the King and Queen have put on their crowns, are carried by young pages in fanciful costumes. It is a charming *défilé*, and I cannot prevent myself from thinking that if some future Act of Parliament suppressed all these things it would be a thousand pities, if only from the purely artistic point of view. I reassure myself with the thought that the five hundred new peers which the Liberal Cabinet threatens to create in order to overcome the resistance of the House of Lords would be still more desirous than the existing peers to preserve the red mantle and the coronet.

I have the good luck, while the new arrivals succeed each other, to be seated by the side of an Italian lady whose husband has long filled an important post in London. She knows everybody, and with a tireless complacency points out and names the principal figures, among whom are some English duchesses, who, *du reste*, are Americans. She makes me see Lord Lansdowne, whom I used to meet in old times at Oxford University when we were both twenty. "If she finds me as I find her," said Chateaubriand in a moment of bad temper, after meeting one of his contemporaries, "I must be indeed well preserved." If Lansdowne and I meet, as is possible, at the garden party at Buckingham Palace, to which I have also had the good fortune to be invited, we shall probably think the same of each other; perhaps, too, we shall tell each other so, but good-humouredly. My amiable neighbour also points out, among others, some notable personages seated on one of the benches opposite to us—the two Unionist leaders of the House of Commons, Austen Chamberlain, whose stepmother is by his side, and Arthur Balfour, whose refined physiognomy and distinguished air strike me, but who, doubtless finding the wait long, slumbers, or at least seems to be enjoying the Parliamentary "sleep." Opposite us, also, are the members of the Foreign Missions Extraordinary. The Diplomatic Corps and the members of the Cabinet are, on the contrary, below us, and invisible to us. The Foreign Envoys who are in uniform glisten with decorations. Only the black garb of the representative of the United States shall I say makes a blot?—no, for to do so would be to express the contrary of my thought; I would rather say attracts attention, for to wear the Republican simple black attire is better than to be adorned with *grands cordons*.

Shortly before half-past nine, and after the orchestra, gathered round the organ, has played two beautiful *morceaux*, a certain movement is noticeable. The first procession passes, singing a hymn. It comes from the chapel behind the altar, and is composed of the two Archbishops (Canterbury and York), the five bishops who are to play a part in the ceremony, the Dean of Westminster, and a number of canons. They go to rejoin in the vestibule of the Abbey the great officers of State, and the peers who are to carry the regalia—that is the various objects brought from the collection of Royal treasures which must be carried before the ceremony by the peers designated in advance and afterwards handed to the King and Queen. Each of these objects is an emblem and has a history.

The King's regalia: St. Edward's Staff, the Spurs, the Sceptre with the Cross, the Pointed Sword of Temporal Justice, or Third Sword; the Pointed Sword of Spiritual Justice, or Second Sword; the Curtana, or Sword of Mercy, the Sword of State, the Sceptre with the Dove, the Orb, St. Edward's Crown, the Patina, the Chalice, the Bible.

The Queen's Regalia: the Ivory Rod with a Dove, the Sceptre with the Cross, Her Majesty's Crown.

Those who bore the King's Regalia were the Duke of Roxburghe, the Earl of Loudoun and Lord Grey de Ruthyn, the Duke of Argyll, Field-Marshal Viscount Kitchener, Field-Marshal Earl Roberts, the Duke of Beaufort, Earl Beauchamp, the Duke of Richmond and Gordon, the Duke of Somerset, the Duke of Northumberland (Lord High Steward), the Bishop of London, the Bishop of Winchester, and the Bishop of Ripon.

The bearers of the Queen's Regalia were the Earl of Durham, the Marquis of Waterford, and the Duke of Devonshire.

After this procession has passed one feels, one hears, although it is a thing invisible to the eyes, the rustle telling us that the great spectacle is on the eve of beginning. People are already feeling the effect of the long wait. Precisely at ten o'clock, with a punctuality very rare at ceremonies of this kind, the Highnesses, Royal and otherwise, representing foreign countries, begin to arrive. At their head are the Crown Prince and Princess of Germany, walking somewhat heavily; then the Hereditary Prince of the Ottoman Empire, the Austrian Hereditary Grand Duke Francis Ferdinand, followed by the Duc and Duchesse d'Aoste. It gratifies me to observe that in the gallery in which I am placed the beauty, the noble presence of our French Princess—French at least by birth and at heart—are even more admired than her diamond diadem and her emerald collar. But when she has passed I am haunted by one of those melancholy recollections which I had anticipated. I think of her unfortunate sister, to whom only yesterday I went to pay a tribute of respectful attachment. Fifteen years ago I had seen her in the marriage cortège of the Duc d'Orléans: to-day, widowed and dethroned, in a modest abode at Richmond, she mourns her husband and her son, yet looks forward hopefully to a return of fortune in favour of the son who remains to her.*

There arrive successively the Princes and Princesses of the Royal House. The Prince of Wales, recently invested with the Order of the Garter, passes first, carrying the plumed hat of the Order, which must be very large for his little head. Scarcely seventeen, he seems rather intimidated, bearing himself, however, with much grace. The train of his mantle is borne by a peer—his crown by another. Then come the other Princes and Princesses—twenty-two in all: the train of each of the latter is borne by a *dame d'honneur.* All are conducted to their places by officers who have received them on their arrival at the Abbey. Everything proceeds with the greatest order and in silence. It is now almost eleven o'clock, and suddenly there is a burst of music. The choir sing: " I was glad when they said unto me, We will go into the house of the Lord."

---

* Queen Amélie and the ex-King of Portugal.

Now the Royal procession enters. The great officers of the Crown, the two Archbishops and the five Bishops, the Knights of the various Orders, the Prime Minister, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer pass according to their rank. What is most remarkable and most significant are the eleven Standards—not only the Royal Standard, borne by the Marquis of Lansdowne; the Standard of the Union, borne by the Duke of Wellington; the Standard of India, borne by Lord Curzon of Kedleston; but the Standards of the various Dominions, which for the first time figure at a Coronation. We see also the Regalia of the King and Queen, of which I have made mention. Then there is a general movement: all bow: the Queen passes.

Queen Mary is a noble and beautiful figure. She walks very slowly. The end of her immense train is borne by the Duchess of Devonshire, daughter of the Marquis of Lansdowne. But as the train would be too heavy for one pair of hands, it is held up by six young girls, all in white satin, and all admirably chosen for the elegance of their figures. The Queen passes in front of the altar and kneels at a *prie-Dieu* on the right, opposite an arm-chair. A moment later the King arrives.

The King advances very slowly. His calm, grave figure appears to me to have a certain hieratical look which gives him a vague resemblance to the Tsar Nicholas, whom I have seen at a much shorter distance at a meeting of the Académie Française. The King wears a purple robe, a crimson velvet mantle, and the collar of the Order of the Garter. On his head is the Durham Cap. His train is borne by eight young men, of whom four are Lords. He passes in front of the altar and places himself by the Queen's side. Both kneel on their *prie-Dieu*, pray for a few moments, then rise and seat themselves. The ceremony now begins. To follow it with understanding one must consult the Ceremonial.

Strange to say, in a country so respectful of tradition, it was found necessary to partly recompose this Order of Procedure, for, if certain parts of it have always remained the same, other parts have varied in different reigns. When the time came to prepare for the Coronation of King Edward in 1902 it was found that the ceremonial used for the crowning of Queen Victoria was of little account, and so a new one was composed. We know that King Edward's illness caused the ceremony to be postponed. When his health allowed it to be celebrated it was necessary to abridge the procedure owing to his comparative weakness. It is this version which has been adopted for the Coronation of King George V.

Already the ceremony has lasted two hours.

It is divided into twenty sections. I have no intention of enumerating all the details. I will confine myself to noting what particularly struck me. In the first place it is both a religious and a political ceremony. The Anglican Church plays a much more considerable *rôle* in it than I had imagined. The Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of England, takes the first place in the service. It is not that he alone performs the act of crowning. He speaks, acts, questions, and imposes conditions. It is the King who answers the former and accepts the latter. There are moments when one can imagine that it is a Pope crowning a German Emperor in the Middle Ages after the Emperor had promised fidelity to the Holy See. One can believe that the King holds his crown from the Anglican Church, and that, therefore, if these appearances were in conformity with the reality, the Established Church is still singularly strong in England; but there is a great distance between these appearances and the reality.

There is the simultaneous affirmation of the rights of the King and the rights of the people. "These rights," says Retz, "never accord better than when silent." But, on the contrary, throughout the whole of the ceremony they are in happy combination. The mutual confidence that this accord will continue makes the greatness of to-day's ceremony. This has been so for a century, and in the future this will be England's strength.

Again, from another point of view, there is the resemblance of the purely religious part of the service to a Catholic service. Having, when at Oxford, attended Anglican services, I know how much these services, in certain parts, resemble ours.* But the resemblance between the two Churches is even greater than I had believed possible, not only as regards the singing of the music, but as regards the rites themselves. All the time I had the feeling that I was taking part in a veritable Mass, less the "elevation" and the "consecration"—which, it is true, are the *raison d'être* of the Mass. The crowning has been a Mass, except for a lapse in the middle of that part of the service. Such have been my impressions of the *ensemble.* I should like to put in relief my justification for those impressions.

The service begins with what is called the "recognition." The Archbishop of Canterbury (the King standing and following the prelate's movements) turns successively to the four sides of the Church, pronounces in a loud and an intelligible voice the following words: "Sirs, These present unto you King George, the undoubted King of this Realm: Wherefore all you who are come this day to do your homage and service, are you willing to do the same?" The people (says the Ceremonial, which I have in my hand) "signify their willingness and joy by loud and repeated acclamations, all with one voice crying out: '*God Save King George!*'" In reality, it is not the people, but the choristers and the Westminster School boys who here enact the *rôle* of the Greek Chorus and who answer with one voice. The trumpets sound: the King is "recognised" by his subjects. He has affirmed his incontestable right; they have affirmed theirs by their response, for that response might conceivably have been different. King and people have understood each other, not silently, but by acclamation.

---

* By "ours" Comte d'Haussonville means those of the Roman Catholic Church.

Then begins, in a dolorous note, the Litany, in which the woes and the weaknesses of man are recited, all his sins are confessed, all the evils which he may dread are enumerated, all the pardons of which he has need are besought, especially all those necessary for the King, the Queen, the nobility, and the Judges. This Litany [textually, in the French, " these Litanies "] are intoned by a Bishop, with a sufficiently fine voice, and the choristers respond with " Have mercy upon us," " Deliver us," " Hear us, good Lord." All the ordinary service follows—the Communion, the Introit, the Epistle, and the Gospel. Then the choristers intone the Creed, all the congregation standing, as is common in England to Catholics and Protestants alike. The Creed, which is the same as ours, struck me by its beauty. Certainly Dumont's Credo, which is sung at great festivals in the Catholic Church, is admirable, but it is monotonous in the etymological sense of the word; the musical phrasing never varies. But the Credo which I have just heard changes at almost every phrase, and great is the effect of these varieties of tone.

The sermon is very short, very simple. To find words equal to the occasion one would have to be a Bossuet. After the sermon the political part of the ceremony begins.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, standing in front of the King, asks: " Will your Majesty take the oath ? "

"I will," His Majesty answers, an open book in his hand.

The Archbishop: Will you solemnly promise and swear to govern the people of this United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and the Dominions thereto belonging, according to the Statutes in Parliament agreed on, and the respective laws and customs of the same?

The King: I solemnly promise so to do.

[This reply makes of the King *incontesté* a Constitutional Sovereign.]

The Archbishop: Will you, to the utmost of your power, cause Law and Justice, in Mercy, to be executed in all your judgments?

The King: I will.

The Archbishop: Will you, to the utmost of your power, maintain the Laws of God, the true profession of the Gospel, and the Protestant Reformed Religion established by Law? And will you maintain and preserve inviolably the settlement of the Church of England and the doctrine, worship, discipline, and government thereof, as by law established in England? And will you preserve unto the Bishops and Clergy of England, and to the Churches there committed to their charge, all such rights and privileges as by law do or shall appertain to them, or any of them?

The King: All this I promise to do.

[This answer makes, or seems to make, him the Church's man—*l'homme de l'Eglise.*]

The King, rising, now goes to the altar, preceded by the bearer of the Sword of State, and, with bared head, his right hand upon the Holy Gospel in the great Bible, which had been carried in the procession, and is now brought from the altar by the Archbishop and tendered to His Majesty, kneeling, says these words: "The things which I have herebefore promised I will perform and keep." He now kisses the Holy Bible and signs the Oath.

Having sworn fidelity to the Constitution and to the Church of England he can now be anointed by the Church.

Their Majesties are now seen kneeling. At this moment the choristers sing, to the liturgical air familiar to us, a literal translation of the "Veni Creator Spiritus." And next they sing, to an air by Handel, this verse from the Book of Kings: "Zadoc the priest and Nathan the prophet anoint Solomon King. And all the people rejoice and cry, God save the King."

The King's crimson robe is removed by the Lord Great Chamberlain, and His Majesty takes off the Cap of State and goes before the altar, seating himself in the chair of King Edward I, which has served at all previous coronations. Under the seat of this chair is the Stone of Scone, symbol of the power of the Kings of Scotland, on which, says the legend, the head of the patriarch Jacob reposed after his dream. Above the King's head four Knights of the Order of the Garter (the Earl of Rosebery among them) hold a rich pall of silk, or cloth of gold. The Dean of Westminster, taking the ampulla and spoon from off the altar, pours some of the holy oil into the spoon, and with it the Archbishop anoints the King on the head, the breast, and the palms of both hands. His Majesty kneels, and the Archbishop, extending both hands, blesses him. *Le Roi est sacré.*

Rising, the King receives from the Dean the *Colobium sindonis*, a sort of rochet, and the Supertunica, a mantle of cloth of gold. Successively there are remitted to him, with a ceremonial too long to detail, the Gold Spurs, the Sword of State, the Sword of Justice, the armilla (another gold mantle), the Orb, the Ring, the Sceptre with the Cross, and the Sceptre with the Dove. He has now received, from the Archbishop's hands, all the attributes of Sovereignty. Only the Crown now awaits him.

The solemn moment has come. This Crown, which the Monarch will receive from the hands of the Church, is a reproduction of that of Edward the Confessor. It is on the altar. "O God," says the Archbishop, "Crown of the faithful, bless, we pray Thee, and sanctify Thy servant George, our King, and as to-day Thou placest a crown of pure gold upon his head, enrich also his Royal heart with Thy abundant grace, and crown him with all the Princely virtues through the Eternal King, Jesus Christ, our Lord."

His Majesty receives the Crown from the hands of the Dean of Westminster, who has brought it from the altar, and now places it reverently upon the Royal head. At this moment all the peers don their coronets, the choristers shout, "God save the King!" the trumpets sound, the great bell rings, the Tower cannon thunder, and the bell-music and the gun-fire tell the People that *the King is crowned.*

Before the Sovereign is conducted to the Throne prepared for him the choir sing a verse beginning "Be strong, and play the man," and the Archbishop prays in these appealing words: "May God give you a prosperous Kingdom, healthful seasons, victorious fleets and armies, a tranquil Empire, a faithful Senate, wise and upright counsellors and judges, a loyal nobility, a respectful gentry,* a clergy pious, learned, and useful, a commonalty honest, pacific, and obedient! Amen."

The King is now conducted to his Throne, to receive homage. The *rôles* are changed. The Archbishop of Canterbury is now the first to kneel before him whom he has questioned and whom he has just anointed and crowned.

First comes the Prince of Wales, manifestly moved. He takes off his coronet, kneels before his father, and repeats the prescribed formula of the oath: "I will be your liegeman for life upon earth. Faithfully I will guard you in life and in death against all. May God aid me!" He kisses his father on the left cheek. When the Prince rises the King (although this is not provided for in the Ceremonial) kisses him, as he (George V) had been formerly kissed by King Edward.

All the Princes of the Blood Royal in turn now kneel, repeating the same formula, and kissing the King on the left cheek. The peers, or rather the head of each of their ranks, do likewise. But *all*, before embracing the Monarch, touch his Crown, to remind him that it is they who have placed it on his head! When they have all defiled past His Majesty the drums beat, the trumpets blare, and three exclamations resound: "God Save

---

* "This word," says Comte d'Haussonville, "has no French equivalent."

King George!" "Long live King George!" "May the King live for ever!"

The crowning of the King is finished. Now begins the crowning of the Queen.

This second part of the ceremony is much shorter and very *gracieuse.* The Queen leaves her chair (where, until now, I could not see her), and, her train borne by the ladies previously mentioned, kneels on the *prie-Dieu* placed for her between the altar and the King's Throne. Four peeresses hold over her head a golden canopy. After a prayer the Archbishop pours on her head a few drops of the holy oil, puts a ring on her finger, and, taking the Crown from the altar, places it, *avec respect,* upon her bowed head. Simultaneously all the peeresses put on their coronets, which they had hitherto held in their hands. As the peeresses' gallery is immediately facing me I can see their uniform gesture, which is exceedingly graceful—it would even be more so if their hands were not encased in white gloves up to their elbows. Some of the ladies appear to have much trouble in fixing their coronets with pins. One of the duchesses (not the least important of them) gives up the attempt momentarily!

During this time, the Archbishop has put the Sceptre in Her Majesty's right hand and the ivory staff with the dove in her left. He prays: "O Lord, Who makest all perfect, grant to Thy servant Mary our Queen that, by the powerful and sweet exercise of her piety and virtue, she may do honour to the high dignity that she has obtained through Our Lord Jesus Christ."

The coronation of the Queen is finished. She rises, passes before the throne of her Consort, to whom she makes a deep curtsy, and who bows to her—then she is ushered to her place on the King's left. The political part of the ceremony is over—the exclusively religious part, the Communion, now begins. All present take their seats and so remain until the end of the ceremony.

I will not write anything here that can wound the feelings of anybody. No one feels more than myself what there is in common between the various Christian Churches, but I made up my mind that I would record my impressions with complete frankness. Well, my impression was that, during this latter part of the ceremony, which, at a Catholic service, would have been the most solemn, the congregation displayed complete indifference. I do not, *bien entendu*, refer to the members of the Foreign Missions * who were opposite to me, for it was quite natural on their part. I speak of all those, of both sexes, whom I could see in the choir stalls or in the galleries, even those of the peeresses. With the exception of some who manifestly prayed, everybody seemed to be waiting, even impatiently, until all was over. All that there is of the fictitious and deceptive in the apparent resemblance between an Anglican and a Catholic service came into my mind. If, to the Communion prayers, some of which almost resemble ours—among others the Preface—and which are all very beautiful, some did not seem to listen, it is because, as a fervent Protestant once said to me, "*the Anglicans worship an empty Altar.*" And that is why the Established Church of England, which has furnished history with such great characters, which still conceals so many virtues, has lost a great part of its empire over souls. That Church has still many who are loyal to it—I doubt if it has many believers. It had to-day at Westminster at least one believer—the Queen. I saw the King only when I leant over the gallery. But I saw the Queen perfectly [*en plein*]. By the inclination of her head, by her whole attitude, by *un je ne sais quoi* which emanated from her, I felt that in her inmost thoughts she had indeed received a Sacrament, and all which I have heard about her assures me that she will know how to exercise over all that "powerful and gentle influence of piety and virtue" which in all countries is the appanage of Woman.

---

* The Corps Diplomatique.

The service proceeds with the chanting of the "Gloria," which is exactly like ours. It ends with an *éclatant* "Te Deum." Meanwhile the King and Queen have retired behind the altar, to the Chapel of St. Edward. They are resting and "restoring" themselves for a moment: they have need of it.* The King changes his costume for the third time, replacing the Royal robe of State by a purple robe, and he goes out again processionally. The Queen precedes him, wearing her heavy Crown, and carrying in her right hand the

---

* I think it *à propos* to recall here what Queen Victoria wrote about her own Coronation on June 28, 1838:

"I again descended from the Throne, and repaired, with all the Peers . . . my Ladies, and Train-bearers, to St. Edward's Chapel, as it is called, but which, as Lord Melbourne said, was more unlike a chapel than anything he had ever seen, for what was *called* an *Altar* was covered with sandwiches, bottles of wine, etc. etc."—"The Letters of Queen Victoria." Edited by A. C. Benson, M.A., and Viscount Esher, G.C.V.O., K.C.B. London: John Murray. 1908.

Sceptre with the Cross, and in her left the ivory Rod with the Dove. The King is wearing the Crown of St. Edward, heavier even than the Queen's. In his right hand is the Sceptre with the Cross—in his left the Orb. Both their Majesties walk very slowly, very majestically, to the sound of "God Save the King," that magnificent air which England stole from France, since, as some say, it was composed by Lulli, and I never hear it without emotion and envy.

But immediately "God Save the King" finishes the popular form of acclamation reclaims its rights. "Three cheers for King George!" shouts one of the choristers. "Hip, hip, hurrah!" is the response of the others; and scarcely has the King passed through the choir gate than we hear a tempest of "hurrahs" in the vast nave, expressing the enthusiasm of the 5000 or 6000 persons who have been waiting since 5 or 6 A.M.; who have seen nothing, have heard scarcely anything; but watched for the moment when their loyalty could explode. And I was told next day that the cheering was still more enthusiastic along the whole route of the Royal cortège when the King and the Queen, in their glass carriage, the Crowns on their heads and the Sceptres in their hands, showed themselves to the crowds in the streets, who, in their turn, crowned the Sovereigns.*

COMTE D'HAUSSONVILLE.

---

* "Ombres Françaises et Visions Anglaises." Par Comte d'Haussonville, de l'Académie Française. Paris: Bernard Grasset, 61 Rue des Saints-Pères. 3 fr. 50.

THE CORONATION PROCESSION

The Coronation Procession started from Buckingham Palace to Westminster Abbey at 10.30 a.m., in the following order:

Trumpeters of the Royal Horse Guards,
Followed by a Squadron of Life Guards, with Band, and the first troop of the Royal Escort.
Dress Carriages and Pairs conveying the Royal Family and Foreign Royal Princes.
The Prince of Wales's Procession.
Their Majesties' Procession, led by an Officer of the Headquarters Staff Advanced Guard of Sovereigns' Escort.
The King's Bargemaster and Twelve Watermen dressed in Doggett's Coat and Badge.
Dress Carriages and Pairs conveying the Household of Their Majesties.
Aides-de-Camp from India, the Territorial, Yeomanry, and Regular Forces.
Headquarters Staff of the Army.
His Majesty's Marshalmen, consisting of 25 Yeomen of the Guard.
Equerries in Ordinary.
Escort of Colonial Cavalry.
Escort of Indian Cavalry.
First Division of Sovereigns' Escort.
State Coach conveying

THEIR MAJESTIES THE KING AND QUEEN.

The Royal Standard.
Staff Officers.
Royal Grooms.
Rear Division of Sovereigns' Escort.

The King and Queen drove to Westminster Abbey by way of the Mall, St. James's Park, Admiralty Arch, Whitehall, Parliament Street, St. Margaret's Street, Broad Sanctuary, to West Entrance of Westminster Abbey.

The return route was by way of Broad Sanctuary, St. Margaret's Street, Parliament Street, Whitehall, Charing Cross, Cockspur Street, Pall Mall, St. James's Street, Piccadilly, Hyde Park Corner, Constitution Hill, to Buckingham Palace.

The Royal Progress through London

On the day after the Coronation came the spectacle of the Sovereigns' Progress through the Metropolis. The Procession left Buckingham Palace at 11.30 a.m. in the following order:

An Officer of War Office Staff.
Detachment and Band of Guards.
General Officer in Command of Colonial Troops.
The Chief Staff Officer and the Aides-de-Camp.

Detachments.	Officers.
King Edward's Horse.	Canadian Troops.

Seven State Carriages conveying
Premiers of Canada, Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, Newfoundland, and Representatives from East and West Indies, Mediterranean Colonies, Fiji and Western Pacific, West and East African Protectorates, etc.,
Escorted by Detachments of
Canadian, New Zealand, South African, Rhodesian, and other Colonial Troops, followed by
Band of 1st Life Guards. Band of 2nd Dragoons.
General Officer in Command of the Indian Troops.

The Chief Staff Officer. The Aides-de-Camp.
Mounted Officers of the Indian Volunteers.
Five State Carriages conveying Indian Princes.
Band of 7th Hussars.
An Officer of War Office Staff.
Troopers Royal Horse Guards.
An Officer of Royal Navy with Detachments from Royal Navy, with Field Battery of Six Guns.
Royal Marine Artillery.
Royal Marine Light Infantry.
Royal Naval School of Music.
Royal Naval Reserve.
Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve.
Mounted Band Royal Artillery.
Section Royal Horse Artillery.
Band of Royal Horse Guards.
Composite Squadron of Household Cavalry.
Section Royal Horse Artillery.
Band of 2nd Dragoon Guards.
Detachments of Dragoon and Dragoon Guards Regiments.
Section of Royal Horse Artillery.
Band of 4th Hussars.
Detachments of Hussar Regiments.
Section of Royal Field Artillery.
Band of 5th Lancers.
Detachments of Lancer Regiments.
Section of (Howitzer) Battery, Royal Field Artillery.
Aides-de-Camp to the King from the Volunteer and Territorial Forces, Militia and Special Reserve, Regular Forces, Naval and Marine Forces.
General Officers.
The Inspector-General of the Forces.
The Lord-Lieutenant of the County of London.

Field-Marshals. The War Office Staff.
Foreign Military Attachés and Officer in Charge.
Deputation of Foreign Officers and Officers in Charge.
The Equerry in Waiting.
Three Carriages and Pairs conveying
The Rt. Hon. the Lord Mayor and Suite.
The Army Council. Equerries to the King.
Honorary Indian Aides-de-Camp to the King.
Colonial and Indian Escorts.
First Division of Sovereigns' Escort.
Second Division of Sovereigns' Escort.
Chief Staff Officer. Chief Constable.
Aides-de-Camp.
The State Carriage drawn by Eight Horses conveying

THEIR MAJESTIES THE KING AND QUEEN.

The Standard.
The Field-Marshal in Command of the Troops.
Capt. H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught. Field Marshal H.R.H. Duke of Connaught and Streathearn.
Vice-Admiral Prince Louis of Battenberg.
Bt. Lt.-Col. H.R.H. The Duke of Teck.
Gen. H.R.H. Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein.
The Gold Stick in Waiting.
The Earl Marshal.
The Master of the Horse.
Equerry in Waiting to the Queen.
Equerries in Waiting to the King.
The Crown Equerry.
Field Officer in Brigade Waiting.
Silver Stick in Waiting.

Equerries.
Aides-de-Camp to the Field-Marshal in Command of the Troops.
Six Royal Grooms.
Third Division of the Sovereigns' Escort.

The Procession proceeded to the City and South London by way of Constitution Hill, Piccadilly, St. James's Street, Pall Mall, Pall Mall East, Trafalgar Square (north side), Duncannon Street, the Strand, Fleet Street, Ludgate Hill, St. Paul's Churchyard, Cannon Street, Queen Victoria Street, Mansion House, King William Street, London Bridge, Borough High Street, Borough Road, Westminster Bridge Road, Westminster Bridge, St. Margaret's Street, round Parliament Square, Parliament Street, Whitehall, Admiralty Arch, the Mall, and so into the Palace.

At St. Paul's Cathedral and the Guildhall

On Thursday, June 29, 1911, the Sovereigns drove to the City, attended a service at St. Paul's, lunched at the Guildhall with the Lord Mayor, and returned by North London. The route was as follows: From Buckingham Palace by the Mall, Marlborough Yard, Pall Mall, Trafalgar Square, Duncannon Street, the Strand, Fleet Street, and Ludgate Hill to St. Paul's Cathedral.

On the conclusion of the service their Majesties proceeded to the Guildhall by way of Cheapside, Old Jewry, and Gresham Street.

After leaving the Guildhall, the return journey was by way of Gresham Street, Moorgate Street, Finsbury Pavement, City Road, The Angel (Islington), St. John Street, Rosebery Avenue, Theobald's Road, Hart Street (Bloomsbury), Oxford Street to Marble Arch, Hyde Park (Broad Drive), Hyde Park Corner, Constitution Hill, and thence to Buckingham Palace.

END OF VOL. I

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CHIVERS
BINDING
DURO FLEXILE

HAMPSTEAD
PUBLIC
LIBRARIES